XEROX

Xerox University Microfilms
Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

WESTERN AMERICANA

Reproduced from the original in the collection of
THE HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY AND ART GALLERY

LIFE

AMONG THE APACHES:

BY

JOHN C. CREMONY,

INTERPRETER TO THE U. S. BOUNDARY COMMISSION, UNDER THE HON. JOHN R.
BARTLETT, IN 1849, '50 AND '51, AND LATE MAJOR OF CALIFORNIA
VOLUNTEER CAVALRY, OPERATING IN ARIZONA, NEW
MEXICO, TEXAS AND WESTERN ARKANSAS.

SAN FRANCISCO:
A. ROMAN & COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.
NEW YORK: 27 HOWARD STREET.
1868.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1868, by
JOHN H. CARMANY & CO.,
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the District
of California.

Printed at the
COMMERCIAL HERALD OFFICE,
San Francisco, Cal.

TO THE PIONEER AND LIBERAL PUBLISHER,

Anton Roman,

THE ZEALOUS AND ENTERPRISING FRIEND OF LITERATURE ON
THE PACIFIC COAST, THIS UNPRETENDING VOLUME IS
RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED AS A TRIBUTE
OF THE AUTHOR'S ESTEEM.

CONTENTS OF THE VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

Comanche Raid.—Detailed to send them away.—Interview with Janamata.—Description of the Chief .... pp. 13-16

CHAPTER II.

March from Texas to El Paso.—The Lipans.—Their Personal Appearance.—Sait-jah and the Picture 17-22

CHAPTER III.

To the Copper Mines.—Encounter with Cuchillo Negro.—Fearful Massacre of Apaches.—Their Terrible Revenge.—Apache Method of Hunting Ducks and Geese.—Apaches Hunting Antelopes.—Mangas Colorado.—My Camp 23-34

CHAPTER IV.

Journey to Sonora.—Adventure with Apaches.—Fronteras.—Mexican Dread of Indians.—Gen. Carasco.—Janos.—Mexican Policy toward the Apaches.—Carasco's Raid.—Gandara, Monteverde and Urea.—Death of Carasco.—Arispe.—Apache Prisoners.—Mexican Guard.—Apaches Attacking a Mexican Train.—Curious Style of Pursuit.—Return to the Copper Mines.—Americans Attacked by Apaches.—Traits of Apache Character.—Craftiness 35-46

CHAPTER V.

Mangas Colorado.—His Personal Appearance, Power, and Influence.—Indian Forces at the Copper Mines.—The Navajoes.—Their Appearance and Subsequent Acts.—Their Schemes Foiled.—Mangas in Full Uniform.—Strange

Mode of Attire.—Inez Gonzales.—Her Rescue.—New Mexican
Summary Proceedings.—Story of Inez.—March into Sonora.—S
Restoration of Inez.—Her subsequent History.—Tanori......

CHAPTER VI.

Rescue of Two Mexican Boys.—War Talk.—Exciting Scene.—Peacef
tion.—Large Indian Forces.—An Apache killed by a Mexica
Excitement.—Fearless Conduct of Col. Craig.—The Apaches
Another War Talk.—Amicable Result.—Necessity of Firmne
caution......

CHAPTER VII.

Jornada del Muerto.—Socorro.—Lieut. Campbell.—Terrific Ride
Splendid Horse.—Narrow Escape.—Caring for a Horse.—Ap
—Treacherous Nature......

CHAPTER VIII.

Gold Mines.—Apache Raid.—Our Mules Stolen.—Unsuccessful Sco
Apache Raid.—Fight with Delgadito's Band.—Recovery of St
Delgadito Wounded.—His Death.—Traits of Apache Chara
Spartian Views.—Apache Idea of American Wisdom.—Adve
Dias with Cuchillo Negro.—Abandon the Copper Mines.—Sc
Cruz.—Bacuachi.—Arispe.—Ures.—Hermosillo.—Guaymas
Santa Rita.—The Pimos and Maricopas.—Their Tradition.—T
Appearance.—Strange Relations Between the Two Tribes.—
on Indian Character.—Our Indian Policy Criticised......

CHAPTER IX.

Pimo Superstition.—Eclipse of the Moon.—Terrible Excitement.
Predicament.—Lieut. Whipple's Coolness.—Satisfactory Re
and Maricopas.—Their Traditions.—Religions and Modes of
Dr. David Wooster.—Arrival of Gen. Conde.—Death of Anto
and Revolting Ceremonies.—The Gila Bend.—Down the Gil
copa Refugees.—Important News.—The Colorado River.—Jo
and his Party......

CHAPTER X.

Fort Yuma.—The Yuma Indians.—Desperate Situation.—Dr. Web

—Caballo en Pelo.—Method of Camping.—Yuma Chiefs our Prisoners.—The Launch.—Crossing the Colorado.—March into the Desert.—Release of the Yumas.—Sandstorm in the Desert.—Final Escape from the Yumas.—Sufferings on the Desert.—Carisso Creek.—Vallecito.—Hospitality of Army Officers.—Col. Heintzleman.—Yumas Reduced to Subjection...pp. 118-128

CHAPTER XI.

Letter from Senator Clemens.—Resign from the Boundary Commission.—Departure of the Commission.—New Expedition.—Ride up the Gila.—Terrible Conflict with Apaches.—Desperate Personal Encounter.—Defeat of the Savages.—Return of the Expedition.—Long for a Quiet Life.—San Francisco.—Cogitations on Indian Character.—Advice Given and Disdained.—The Fatal Results.—Necessity for Constant Caution.—Extent of Apache Country.—Numerical Strength of the Apaches.—Female Warriors.—False Impressions of Indian Character.............................. 129-143

CHAPTER XII.

Enter the Volunteer Service.—The Column from California.—Antelope Peak.—Visited by Yumas.—Making Metates.—Get Rid of them by a Ruse.—The Maricopas Again.—Carrying the Mails.—Small Force in Camp.—Visit of Col. Rigg.—The Maricopas Recognize me.—Their Gratitude.—Captain Killmoon.—Another Remarkable Lunar Performance.—Loring's Assistance.—Bargaining for Chickens.—Magic Virtues of the Compass.—Effect of the Burning Glass.. 144-154

CHAPTER XIII.

Sent to the Front.—Dreadful Storm at the San Pedro River.—Night Alarm.—Apaches Gathering.—Dragoon Springs.—Capt. Thomas Roberts.—Apache Pass.—Bloody and Desperate Fight with Apaches.—The Savages Whipped.—Remarkable Infantry March.—Heroism of John Teal.—He wounds Mangas Colorado, and whips off Fifteen Apaches.—Gallantry of Sergeant Mitchell and his Cavalry.—Effect of Shelling the Apaches.—Number of Indians Killed.—Our Losses.—Re enter the Pass.—Refused Permission to Charge.—San Simon.. 155-167

CHAPTER XIV.

Return from the San Simon.—Avoid Apache Pass.—Reasons for so Doing.—Night Marching.—Apaches show Themselves.—Rattlesnakes.—Ojo de los Her-

manos.—San Pedro Again.—Return through Ap
Dead Americans. —Mangas Colorado's Deceit. —
Killed.—Apache Cunning and Calculation.—Bur
was Cured of his Wound. —Death of Mangas Co
Abilities of Mangas. —Apache Democracy. —
Mangas Colorado ....

CHAPTER XV.

Apache Signals.—Mode of Marching through Arizona
Watchfulness and Caution.—The Gila Country.—
formation Indispensable for a Successful Cam
The Smoke Columns.—Pressed Grass.—Bent an
Trees.—Mounted Parties.—The Stone Signals.—
between White Men's and Apache Philosophy.—
Apache Armament.—Their Knowledge of Color
of It.—Their Hatred of all Other Races.—Proofs
Our Indian Policy Discussed.—Apache Want o
Obtain their Guns and Ammunition.—Extent of
ern Mexico.—Monuments of Apache Massacre
Arizona..

CHAPTER XVI.

Condition of New Mexico and Arizona.—Active Campai
—Bosque Redondo.—More Intimate Relations wi
Sumner. —Scarcity of Wood. —Climate. —Arriv
War.—Dog Cañon.—Apache Embassy.—Mr. Lab
the Apaches.—Form a Council.—Hunting Excur
Mode of Killing Antelopes. —Learn more of Ind
Greater Share of their Confidence..................

CHAPTER XVII.

Satisfaction of the Apaches.—Policy.—Beneficial Resul
Responsibility.—Short Allowance.—The Apache
Carleton's Visit. —Bishop Lamy. —Supplies Re
Governor.—Juan Cojo.—Commence Learning the
pile a Vocabulary.—Gradually gain Apache Conf
ance with Old Enemies.—Altered Relations.—F
Instruction thrown Away. —Apache Ideas of W
Work. —Influence of their Women.—Mescal.—
tion..

pache Pass.—Meet thirteen
—How the Americans were
ry the Dead.—How Mangas
Colorado.—The Genius and
-Extent of the Ravages of
........................pp. 168-178

and New Mexico.—Apache
y.—Grama Grass.—The In-
mpaign against Apaches.—
and Broken Twigs.—Blazed
—Kit Carson.—Comparison
—The Present Condition of
ors, and the Use they make
fs of their Good Breeding.—
of Sympathy.—How they
of their Ravages in North.
res in Arizona.—Mines of
.... 179-196

aign.—Californian Soldiers.
with Apaches.—Site of Fort
ival of Apache Prisoners of
abadie.—Placed in Charge of
ursion with Apaches.—Their
ndian Character.—Obtain a
.... 197-205

I.

ults to my Men.—Individual
e Rations Continued.—Gen.
Received.—Apaches Elect a
he Apache Language.—Com-
nfidence.—Renew Acquaint-
-Former Events Recalled.—
Warfare.—Their Horror of
l.—Its Intoxicating Quali-
.... 206-217

CHAPTER XVIII.

Dangerous Hunting at the Bosque.—Dr. McNulty's Adventure.—Do
his Indians.—Mr. Descourtis' Adventure.—Nah-kah-yen and
Hunting a Lion.—The Indian and the Panther.—Combat Be
and a Lion.—The Result.—Beavers.—Apache Love of Torturi
Indian.—A Wounded Apache to be Dreaded..................

CHAPTER XIX.

Anecdote of Capt. Bristol.—Surprise and Admiration of the Indians.
Him a Great Medicine.—Wonders of the Microscope.—Thei
Hunting.—Departure of Ojo Blanco.—Apache Dread of Di
Influenza.—Apache Prophet.—His Dream and Interpretation.
ter Dream and Interpretation.—Useful Services of Dr. Gwyt
fulness of Gian-nah-tah.—Necessity of Using Artifice ....

CHAPTER XX.

The Apache Language.—Its Remarkable Regularity and Copiousness.
Given.—Reflections.—How Apaches are Named.—Apache Bea
inclination to tell their Apache Names ....

CHAPTER XXI.

Chastity of Apache Women.—Wantonness of the Navajoes.—Compa
tuted.—Curious Customs.—A Feast and Dance.—Ceremonies.
of the Feast.—Depilorizing the Eyes.—Apache Marriages.—Sty
ship.—Coquetry.—Horses as Money.—The Bower of Love.—Aff
fulness.—Apache System of Polygamy.—Customs Regulating
Nah-tanh's Views.—Burials.—Funeral Ceremonies.—Apache
Small-Pox.—Capt. Shirland.—Fort Davis.—Fight with Apache
Whipped ....

CHAPTER XXII.

Apaches as Warriors.—Fight with the Maricopas.—Fight with the Co
Cold Weather.—Apache Camp Attacked by Hostile Navajoes.
Pursued and Destroyed.—Animals Recovered.—Carillo and the
McGrew and Porter.—Their Gallantry.—Apache Ideas of Scalpin
Apache Parade.—Strange Request.—Denied.—Purification of A
Prophet again Making Trouble.—Apache Cavalry Manoeuvres
tions ....

CHAPTER X

Ojo Blanco Wounded.—Apache Doctoring.—Dr.
—Ojo Blanco Killed in Battle.—Religious
their Religion. —The Deluge. —Apaches
Ideas in Reference to Women. —Mexican
Character of their Children.—Horrible S
Suggestions.—Their Respect for Traditio

CHAPTER X

Apache Endurance.—Inroad.—Extensive Travel
Passes in New Mexico. —Heavy Snow. —
Indians Break Cover.—Continued Snow-
Ride.—Indians Overtaken by Mr. Labadi
der Recovered. —Overtake and Protect
Labadie Arrives Safely at Fort Sumne
Cold.—Indians' Indifference to Cold.—Ap
Great Distances Accomplished..........

CHAPTER X

Religious Ceremonies.—Lack of Veneration.—
Apache "Rough."—Tais-ah-das-ay-ge. —
Scout. —Apache "Hide and Seek."—
Apache Customs concerning Murder.—
citals. —Former Condition of the New
Commenced.—Reflections.—Articles of A
Apache Estimate of Dead Women.—Nava

CHAPTER X

Apache Boldness and Address.—The Papago
Apache.—An Officer's Horse Stolen.—So
cessity for Prudence.—Apache Games.—
Ideas of Gambling.—Races at Fort Sum
the Great Navajo Warrior..............

CHAPTER X

Ignorance of Indian Character Discussed.—Fo
Indian Affairs should be Managed.—Nec
in Vogue.—Crushing Out Advised.—How
Proper Method of Campaigning.—Sugg
gress.—General Deductions.—California

XIII.

Gwyther's Treatment.—Results.
Creed of the Apaches.—Policy in
Ignorant of their Origin. — Their
Women as Wives of Apaches. —
pectacle in Cooke's Cañon.—A few
ns Upset............ pp. 262-273

XIV.

ing.—Wild Horses.—El Cupido.—
Cold Weather. — Change Base.—
storm. — Go in Pursuit. — Rough
s.—Navajoes Whipped and Plun-
Labadie. — Hunt for Navajoes.—
r. — Conchas Springs. — Intense
ache Method of Running Sheep.—
.... 273-284

XV.

Evidences of Mineral Wealth.—An
— Remarkable Order. — Another
rairie Dogs and their Guests. —
ons-in-jah.—His Career.—His Re-
Mexicans. — How the Difficulties
pache Food.—Native Potatoes.—
jo Dread of Corpses...... 285-297

XVI.

s.—A Fine Herd Stolen by One
ldier Robbed of his Horse.—Ne
-Sons-in-jah's Version. — Apache
er. — The Winners. — Manuelito,
.... 298-309

XVII.

litical Indian Agencies.—How the
essity of Force.—Absurd System
the Apaches should be Fought.—
stions.—Culpable Neglect of Con-
n Troops.—Conclusion... 310-322

PREFACE.

Those who may favor the succeeding pages with thei
must not expect any attempt at fine writing or glowing de
The author's intention is, to furnish a plain, unvarnishe
actual occurrences and facts illustrative of the various tri
dians occupying that vast region which extends from the
river on the west, to the settlements of Texas on the east,
Taos in New Mexico to Durango in the Mexican Republic.

In the front rank of the tribes, occupying the region
within the limits mentioned, stands the great Apache race,
are the Comanches. The former of these will engage m
author's attention for very many and obvious reasons.
lieved that the book will contain a large amount of valu
mation, to be derived from no other source extant, and it
author's endeavor to place it before his readers in a man
will engage their attention. Nothing not strictly true will
ted into its pages, and if some of the incidents narrated
of a thrilling character, the reader will experience satis
knowing that they are not the results of imaginative
Whenever a personal adventure is narrated, it will be foun
trate some particular phase of character; none are recoun
do not convey information.

Our Government has expended millions of dollars, i
since the acquisition of California, in efforts to reduce th

and Navajoes, who occupy that o
the highway for overland migra
we are as far from success to-day
reason is obvious. We have no
ligently acquainted with those
them is quite as uncertain and
that which obtains in the cent
best informed on the matter, an
were, at the same time—most
imparting their information; wh
of the subject have been the
their fragmentary gleanings. If
bettering our present deplorable
light, it will accomplish the auth

San Francisco, August, 1868.

extensive belt of country which forms
ation from the East to the West; but
ay as we were twenty years ago. The
ever striven to make ourselves intel-
e tribes. Nearly all that relates to
l indefinite to our comprehension as
ter of Africa. Those who were the
nd had given it the closest attention,
unfortunately—the least capable of
while those who were almost ignorant
most forward to give the results of
If this volume shall have the effect of
le Indian policy, by letting in some
thor's object.

J. C. C.

CHAPTER I

Comanche Raid.—Detailed to send them away.—I
Description of the Chief.

My first business acquaintance wi
in the year 1847. A band of about
manche warriors, led by a chief name
“Red Buffalo,” taking advantage of
defenceless condition of the Mexican
Grande, about seventy miles below
commenced a series of depredations.
immediately given to the American o
at that post, and the writer was detail
fifty men, to drive off the invaders, v
engage in hostilities, unless the India
tory and deaf to all other appeals.

After marching fifty miles, which wa
two days, we arrived at the scene of op
the Comanches on the highway. Ou
diately disposed to the best advantag
white handkerchief on the point of my
alone toward the chief, who, leaving
forward to meet me. He spoke Spani
evidently acquired it in his many mar
into Mexico. Having met, I offered hi
was accepted with Indian stoicism. W
fect silence for half a minute, when th
been consumed the following dialogue

Officer.—“I am sent to tell you, tha

the Rio Grande with your warriors, and come here no more to molest these people while we remain in the country."

Indian.—"I hear your words. They are not pleasant. These Mexicans are our natural enemies; we have warred against them for many years. They are also your enemies. You are killing them in their own country, the same as I am. The Comanches are friends to the Americans. Why do you prevent your friends from hunting your enemies and theirs?"

Officer.—"Red man, you mistake. These people were our enemies, but they have yielded, and all who have submitted are under our protection. We have ceased from doing them harm, and if we permit you to injure them after we have disarmed them, it would be the same as if we did so ourselves."

Indian.—"But your revenge is for yourselves. It does not satisfy us for the blood of Comanches slain by Mexicans. You made war upon them without our consent or knowledge. We do the same. A wise warrior takes advantage of his enemy's weakness. It is now our opportunity."

Officer.—"These people are our captives, and cannot continue to be your enemies while in that condition. Suppose you had a dozen Apache captives, would you permit the Kaddos to come into your camp and kill them; take their property and go off without resistance?"

Indian.—"White man, your tongue is double, like a woman's; but the Comanche does not feel to war against his American brothers. I and my people will recross the Rio Grande, but will not promise never to come back. Good-by."

Our colloquy ended—we smoked another cigarito; he waved his hand to his warriors, and without another word directed his course to the river, which was soon waded, and Janamata, with his followers, stood on American soil. This little interview imparted the knowledge that the American savages are rather keen logicians, from their own uncivilized stand-point, as they are incapable of appreciating the moral and religious sensibilities of enlightened races.

Janamata was a good type of his tribe, in point of physical development. He was about five feet ten inches in height, with well proportioned shoulders, very deep chest, and long, thin, but muscular arms. His forehead was very broad and moderately high, his mouth enormous, and garnished with strong white teeth. His nose was of the Roman order, broad and with much expanded nostrils, which appeared to pulsate with every emotion; but his countenance was rigid and immovable as bronze. His arms consisted of a bow and quiver full of arrows, a long lance, a long sharp knife, worn in the top of his moccasin boot, and a very good Colt's revolver. A strong shield of triple buffalo hide, ornamented with brass studs, hung from his saddle bow, and his dress was composed of buckskin and buffalo hide well tanned and flexible, but wholly free from ornament. I afterwards learned from a Texas Ranger that he was called Janamata, or the "Red Buffalo," from a desperate encounter he once had with one of those animals, which had ripped up his horse, and attacked him on foot. In this encounter Janamata had only his knife to depend on, as he had lost lance and bow when unhorsed. It is related that as the buffalo charged upon him, he sprang over the animal's lowered front, and landing on his back, plunged his knife several times into its body; then, as suddenly jumping off behind, he seized it by the tail and with one cut severed the ham-string. These details made an impression upon me at the time which has never been effaced or weakened.

Years passed before another opportunity offered to e
tend my acquaintance with Indians, and then in a tota
different sphere and under different circumstances, a
with many different tribes. The lapse of time, howev
gave opportunity for reflection, and I realized the f
that my former rude impressions, founded upon su
authorities as Catlin, Cooper, and others, must be co
siderably modified; and I resolved that, should occasi
ever offer, I would devote attention and time to the o
servation of Indian character as it is, and not as I h
believed it to be from writers on the subject.

CHAPTER II.

March from Texas to El Paso.—The Lipans.—Their Personal Appearance.—Sali-jah and the Picture.

In the year 1849, I was prevailed upon by Dr. Thomas H. Webb, Secretary of the Massachusetts Historical Society, to forego my position on the *Boston Herald*, and accept an appointment on the United States Boundary Commission, then being re-organized under the Hon. John R. Bartlett. Mr. Bartlett selected some thirty of the Commission, and determined to proceed by way of the Northern Route, which, up to that period, had been traveled only three times, and was, consequently, but little known. The most valuable information relative to the route was received from Judge Ankrim—a brave, courteous and handsome gentleman. In accordance with the directions pricked out on Mr. Bartlett's traveling chart by Judge Ankrim, one portion of the Commission directed their way, leaving the great body, under Col. John McClellan, U. S. Topographical Engineers, to come on by what is known as the Southern Route, a well beaten and frequently used road. Many portions of the way selected by Mr. Bartlett had never before been gone over by white men. There was no trail to direct our course, nor did we possess any satisfactory knowledge of its ability to afford wood, water and grass. The maps, however, showed that it was crossed by certain streams at stated distances, and the venture was boldly undertaken.

On arriving within a short distance of the South Con-

cho river, we camped on a small stream named th
lope creek, situated in the Lipan country. Ea
morning, as the party were about to resume the
an Indian was seen advancing at full speed. A
ordered, and in a few minutes he was among us
in Spanish, for the commander. I at once took
Mr. Bartlett, and, on approaching the Commissio
red visitant commenced fumbling among his
from which he extracted a dirty piece of handk
which, being unrolled, disclosed another dirty
the unwrapping continued until five pieces of
fragments had been unrolled, displaying a h
leopard skin pouch, in which were a number of
mendations, signed by well-known Americans,
ting forth that the bearer, Chipota, a Lipan chie
short time before, celebrated a treaty of peace
United States, and was entitled to the considera
kindness of all American travelers over those
During the interview, I attentively watched the
who gave slight indications of uneasiness as to
ner in which his overtures would be received;
were soon dissipated by the frank and amicable
ment of Mr. Bartlett, who invited his visitor
seat in his carriage and proceed with him to
camp, which was about twelve miles further.
appeared to be about sixty years of age. He w
stout and sinewy, with an uncommonly high an
sive forehead, and so singularly like the celebrat
Cass in appearance, that the fact was immedi
marked by all the party who had ever seen Mr
his portrait.

The Commissioner traveled in a close carriag
by four fleet and powerful mules. His *compagn*
age was invariably Dr. Webb, who could never be

to mount a horse. The inside of the carriage was well supplied with Colt's and Sharp's rifles, Colt's pistols, a double-barreled shot gun, lots of ammunition, a spy-glass, and a number of small but useful tools. Upon entering this traveling arsenal, old Chipota looked around him with ill-concealed astonishment, which was greatly heightened by Mr. Bartlett preparing the spy-glass, and permitting him to take a good look through it at a distant object. The Indian could hardly credit that the thing he saw so distinctly through the glass was the same object he beheld so dimly with his naked eye. Not until we arrived in camp, however, were his senses brought to the full stand-point of admiration by the rapid discharges and terrific effects of the fire from our repeating rifles and pistols. Looking around with undissembled amazement, he said in his own language, as if soliloquizing: "*Inday pindah lickoyee schlango poohacante.*" It was not until years had passed that I became aware of the meaning of these words, but I noted them at the time by asking him to repeat them, and took a memorandum of their sounds. Since then I have discovered that they mean—"These people of the white eyes are wonderful medicine men."

About two hours after camping, we were joined by four more Lipans, the leader being named Chiquito, a Spanish term, signifying "the little one." He was tall, thin, sinewy, and had the appearance of having been possessed of more than ordinary powers of endurance. The likeness of this chief to General Jackson was quite as remarkable and striking as that of Chipota to General Cass, and was a general subject of remark. The most prominent member of Chiquito's escort was a tall, strong, well-made and handsome young Lipan dandy, who rejoiced in the name of Sait-jah, disdaining to be known

by any Spanish term. This fellow evidentl
himself of some consequence, and strutted a
very decided aristocratic bearing. After a
passed in displaying his colossal proportions,
did leopard skin saddle, quiver, leggins, et
quietly beckoned to him and the others, and,
gave them a short account of the wonders he h
His warnings were received with trust by a
jah, who, like most inexperienced and flatte
men, savage or civilised, preferred to rely c
experiences. Our party being small, and offe
temptations, I kept a strict but unobserved
the Indians, and suspected the tenor of Chi
course, from his gesticulations. In a few mi
jah came toward me in a swaggering manner
in broken Spanish: "Our chief says you grea
he says your pistol fires six times without rel
says you bring the trees which are afar off c
eye, so you can count the leaves; he says your
a great way, and never miss; he says a great
wonderful things, which I cannot believe.
bewitched him." Drawing a six-shooter from
pointed out a tree about seventy-five yards d
commenced firing rapidly. Each shot struc
and blazed off large fragments of the bark. S
astonished at the power of the weapon, and r
tempt to conceal his surprise; but his admir
out into emphatic expression when he witness
cision and reach of our Sharp's rifles, and t
with which they could be loaded and fired.
had evidently received a heavy fall, and his lo
was toned down to the level of his white visi

In my possession was the miniature of a y
whose many graces of person, cultivated min

tly believed
about with a
short time
s, his splen-
etc., Chipota
d, I suppose,
had beheld.
all but Sait-
tered young
on his own
ffering many
l watch over
hipota's dis-
ninutes Sait-
er, and said,
eat medicine;
eloading; he
close to the
r guns reach
t many other
. You have
m my belt, I
distant, and
ck the tree,
Sait-jah was
l made no at-
iration broke
essed the pre-
the rapidity
. His pride
lofty bearing
sitors.
young lady,
nd and amia-

---

ble disposition, rendered her one of the most
Boston's fairest daughters. Sait-jah happen
this picture, and asked permission to take a g
the pleasant features. The miniature was pl
hand, and his eyes seemed to devour its expres
ments. Throughout the remainder of that d
dian bored me with frequent requests for ano
and the next morning, so soon as the camp wa
offered me his bow, arrows and splendid leopa
the picture. These offers being refused, he th
his horse, and whatever other property he m
for its possession; but, finding me deaf to his
he took one long, last look, vaulted on his ho
at full speed and rapidly disappeared in the di

The Lipans are a numerous and warlike trib
over a vast extent of country, and perpetual
with the Comanches, Kaddos, and other tribe
ern Texas. Since acquiring the Apache langua
discovered that they are a branch of that gre
speaking identically the same language, with t
tion of a few terms and names of things e
their region and not generally known to those
which inhabit Arizona and New Mexico. The
Apaches, in their search for buffaloes, frequentl
Lipans, and always on the best of terms. N
are known to have ever occurred between them
act in concert against the Comanches, and
tribes. All the remarks on the Apache race,
be found in the succeeding pages of this wo
with equal force to the Lipans, with the exc
their tribal organization, the Lipans havin
chiefs, whom they obey on all occasions, and w
are final; while the Apaches are pure democ
warrior being his own master, and submittin

the temporary control of a chief electe

As no other Indians were encounte
arrival at Paso del Norte, the remaind
with its many incidents, sufferings an
be expatiated upon in this work, wh
cated to descriptions of Indian life.

for the occasion.
d until after our
of our journey
dangers, will not
h is solely dedi-

CHAPTER III.

To the Copper Mines. — Encounter with Cuchillo Negro. -
Apaches. — Their Terrible Revenge. — Apache Met
and Geese. — Apaches Hunting Antelopes.—Mangas

In the latter part of January, 1850, M
advantage of the march of Col. Craig, c
military escort of the Boundary Comm
Dr. Webb, Mr. Thurber and myself to th
of Santa Rita, as Col. Craig had deter
that place his head-quarters until the e
tions of the Commission should demand s
post. Dr. Webb, Secretary of the Comm
Thurber, Botanist, rode in Mr. Bartlett's
he had loaned them for the trip, but I p
the saddle, being mounted on an uncomm
I had bought from Capt. A. Buford, Fir
Dragoons. In order not to be distress
painful and tiresome marches of the infa
invariably ordered Wells, the carriage
forward to the next camping ground, an
arrived three or four hours in advance of
horse keeping up with the carriage, for I
my party in so dangerous an Indian cou
we were then penetrating. Sometimes,
was rough and difficult for the carriage
tomed to ride ahead in search of game
armed to the teeth with two belt and t
shooters, a Sharp's carbine and a large bo

the fourth day of our march,
miles ahead of the carriage, whi
ing the passage through Cooke'
and very dangerous defile, abou
Mimbres river, and having observ
looked around in hope of seei
perceived myself surrounded by
five Indians, who advanced upo
by a savage who rode several ya
At that time I could have broke
rejoined my party with but littl
infinitely superior in strength an
but as I felt convinced that the c
sight within a short time, my res
taken to adopt another policy.
was from twenty-five to thirty y
followers, and about the same di
ing which I drew a heavy holst
hand and putting spurs to my ho
or two, when I addressed him to
Spanish:

"Keep off or I will shoot you.

To this he replied: "Who are
come?"

Observing that his warriors w
said: "See here, Indian, you
against one man, but I have got
kill me, but I will kill you, so te
once."

Involuntarily the Apache wave
riors halted about forty yards of
distance, I again urged the chief
back still further, at the same ti
shake of my pistol. This, too, wa

I advanced about three
ich was detained in mak-
's cañon, a rough, rocky
t forty miles east of the
ved some antelope tracks,
ng the animals, when I
a band of about twenty-
n me from all sides, led
rds ahead of all others.
n through the circle and
le risk, as my horse was
nd speed to their ponies,
carriage would heave in
solution was immediately
By this time their leader
yards in advance of his
istance from me, perceiv-
er pistol with my right
orse, met him in a bound
o the following effect, in

."

you, and whence do you

ere closing upon me, I
have plenty of warriors
t you; your people may
ll them to hold back at

d his hand, and his war-
f. Not liking so short a
f to let his warriors fall
ime giving a significant
as done, and the Apaches

increased their distance to about c
yards. The chief, whom I afterw
chillo Negro, or the "Black Knife
gain my left side, but I foiled hi
my horse's head in his direction
He then said, "Good-by," and
comrades, but I again brought hi
sition, by telling him I would not
stay with me until my friends ca
considerable surprise, for he eviden
idea that I was alone, or nearly so
logue then took place:

Cuchillo Negro.—"What do you

American.—"I came here becau
me. He is coming soon with a larg
through this country, but does no
do any harm to his Apache bre
peace, and will always act peaceab
us to adopt other measures; if you
will do you great harm."

Cuchillo Negro.—"I do not belie
are alone. My people have been
have seen no forces coming this wa
been on the road, we would have k
my power. What more have you t

American.—"Indian, you are foo
has made you careless. A company
behind me; but your young men ha
squaws have retained them in cam
have been on the lookout. I am no
you, personally, are in mine. Your
but not until I have put a ball throu
signal you may make to them, or an
on their part, will also be signal for

do not believe me, wait a few
my friends come round the p
are many, and intend to re
country. If you treat them
get many presents, but if you
search you out among the ro
try, will take possession of
destroy your plantations and
choose."

Cuchillo Negro.—"For m
penetrated these regions, and
to enter our country without
you had friends, as you say
them and come on alone, for
men have not been led away
none within two sun's marc
party with you, they would h
notice. You have many gu
and you cannot escape if I g

American.—"Indian, I do
signal so long as you and I a
a few moments, and see whet

This proposition was finall
sat on our horses waiting th
It is unnecessary to say wh
the next quarter of an hour, n
each adopted to get or keep
I feel incapable of doing just
expiration of the time ment
sight, about a quarter of a m
of the mountain, and it had
ing the march through the r
the infantry had come up
midable array of glittering t

w moments, and you will see
point of yonder hill. They
emain several moons in your
well you will grow rich and
ou treat them badly they will
ocks and hills of your coun-
f your watering places, will
nd kill your warriors. Now

many years no white man has
nd we do not permit people
t knowing their purpose. If
ay, you would not have left
r that is foolish. My young
y by the squaws, for there are
rch, and if you had a large
have known it and given me
guns, but I have many men,
give the signal."
on't think you will give that
are so close together. Wait
ether I tell the truth."
lly agreed to by him, and we
he approach of the carriage.
hat my feelings were during
nor to explain the manœuvres
the advantage of his enemy.
stice to the occasion. At the
ntioned, the carriage hove in
mile off, rounding the point
been detained so much dur-
rocky and terrible defile that
with it and presented a for-
tubes immediately in its rear.

At this unexpected sight,
moment like one in a drea
self, he advanced directly to
hand and saying, "*Jeunie, j*
amicable, good. I refused
suddenly jerk me off my ho
but contented myself by sa
are friends. He then turne
speed, attended by his war
another rocky cañon, about
It was subsequently my fa
eral other times, and I am s
of our interview on the oc
me no harm either with him

After leaving Doña Ana,
portion of the Jornada del
what is known as the San
Grande, a mile or two bel
subsequently built. As the
scene of another incident,
for the present. The Rio G
much difficulty, and our cam
on the western bank of the
fested by wild ducks and h
great numbers of them in th

In the early winter, when
arrive in great flocks, the Ap
gourds and set them adrift o
lagoon, whence they were
wind until they reached th
were recovered and again set
and geese exhibit dread and
floating objects, but soon g
them no further attention. I

the Indians then fit these gourds upon their heads, having been furnished with holes for the eyes, nose and mouth, and, armed with a bag, they enter the water—not over five feet deep in any part—and exactly imitating the bobbing motion of the empty gourd upon the water, succeed in getting close enough to the birds, which are then caught by the feet, suddenly dragged under water, and stowed in the bag. The dexterity and naturalness with which this is done almost exceeds belief, yet it is a common thing among them.

About eighteen or twenty miles east of the Copper Mines of Santa Rita, is a hot spring, the waters of which exhibit a heat of 125 degrees Fahrenheit, and after having crossed the Mimbres, the whole party directed its course to this spring. After examining it thoroughly, and having the qualities of its water tested by Dr. Webb, we prosecuted our march; but my attention was soon after arrested by a number of antelopes feeding on the plain, not more than half a mile distant. Anxious to procure one, I left the party, and, galloping in the direction of the herd, arrived within five hundred yards of it, when I dismounted and tying my horse to a yucca bush, proceeded cautiously on foot, carbine in hand. Crawling from bush to bush, and hiding behind every stone which offered any shelter, I got within handsome range of a fine buck, and feeling sure that the animal could not escape me, I raised to fire, when, just as I was taking aim, I was astonished to see the animal raise erect upon its hind legs, and heard it cry out, in fair Spanish, "*No tiras, no tiras!*"—don't fire, don't fire! What I would have sworn was an antelope, proved to be a young Indian, the son of Ponce, a chief, who, having enveloped himself in an antelope's skin, with head, horns and all complete, had gradually crept up to the herd under his disguise, until his operations were brought to an untimely end by perceiving my aim directed at him. The Apaches frequently adopt this method of hunting, and imitate the actions of the antelopes so exactly as to completely mislead those animals with the belief that their deadliest enemy is one of their number.

We arrived at the Copper Mines, without further accident, one day in advance of our military escort, and had no sooner pitched our tent than we were visited by some eight or ten of the most villainous looking Apaches it is possible to conceive. Although the weather was exceedingly cold, with snow six inches deep on a level, and, in some places where it had drifted, as deep as three or four feet, the Indians were wholly nude, with the exception of a diminutive breech cloth. They bore no arms of any kind and pretended to be very friendly, having undoubtedly seen our train and escort crossing the plain from their various places of observation on the top of Ben Moore, which is eight thousand feet high. Our mules were hitched to the several wheels of the carriage and my horse in the rear, while one of our party kept constant and vigilant watch over the animals. When night fell Dr. Webb informed the Apaches, through me, that they must leave camp, which they did after receiving a few presents in the shape of tobacco, beads and some cotton cloth. A rousing fire was then made in front of the tent, and after a hearty supper our small party retired upon their arms, with one man on guard. It was afterwards discovered that among our visitors were the renowned warriors Delgadito, Ponce and Coletto Amarillo. These were their Mexican names—their Indian appellations I never learned.

About 11 o'clock, A. M., next day, Col. Craig appeared with his command, and formally took possession of the

Copper Mines, the great head-quarters of the redoubta
chief, Mangas Colorado, or the "Red Sleeves," bey
all comparison the most famous Apache warrior
statesman of the present century. The word statesm
is used advisedly in his case, as will be made apparen
the reader in the course of his perusal. The te
chief will also be found, hereafter, to have a very gr
modification, in so far as refers to the Apache race.

The Copper Mines of Santa Rita are located imm
diately at the foot of a huge and prominent mou
ain, named Ben Moore. These extensive mines had b
abandoned for the space of eighty years, but were
commonly rich and remunerative. They were forme
owned by a wealthy Mexican company, who sent the
to Chihuahua, where a Government mint existed,
had the ore refined and struck into the copper coins
of the country. Although the distance was over th
hundred miles, and every pound of ore had to be tran
ported on pack mules, yet it proved a paying busine
and mining was vigorously prosecuted for a space
some twenty years. Huge masses of ore, yielding fr
sixty to ninety per cent. of pure copper, are still visi
all about the mine, and frequently considerable pieces
pure copper are met with by the visitor. The reason
its sudden and long abandonment was asked, and
following story related.

During the period that the Mexicans carried on ope
tions at the mines, the Apaches appeared very friend
receiving frequent presents, and visiting the houses
the miners without question. But every now and th
the Mexicans lost a few mules, or had a man or t
killed, and their suspicions were roused against t
Apaches, who stoutly denied all knowledge of these a
and put on an air of offended pride. This state of affa

continued to grow worse and worse, until an Englishman, named Johnson, undertook to "settle matters," and to that end received *carte blanche* from his Mexican employers. Johnson ordered a *fiesta*, or feast, prepared, and invited all the Copper Mine Apaches to partake. The invitation was joyfully accepted, and between nine hundred and a thousand, including men, women and children, assembled to do justice to the hospitality of their entertainers. They were caused to sit grouped together as much as possible, while their host had prepared a six-pounder gun, loaded to the muzzle with slugs, musket balls, nails and pieces of glass, within one hundred yards of their main body. This cannon was concealed under a pile of pack saddles and other rubbish, but trained on the spot to be occupied by the Apaches. The time arrived; the feast was ready; the gun loaded and primed; Johnson stood ready with a lighted cigar to give the parting salute, and while all were eating as Apaches only can eat, the terrible storm of death was sped into their ranks, killing, wounding and maiming several hundred. This fearful volley was immediately followed up by a charge on the part of the Mexicans, who showed no pity to the wounded until nearly four hundred victims had been sacrificed at this feast of death. The survivors fled in dismay, and for several months the miners fancied they had forever got rid of the much hated Apaches. It was an ill-grounded hope, as the sequel proved.

The Copper Mines were entirely dependent upon Chihuahua for all supplies, and large *conductas*, or trains with guards, were employed in the business of bringing in such supplies, and taking away the ore. So regular had been the arrival and departure of these trains, that no efforts were made to retain provisions enough on hand

in the event of a failure to arrive. Besides, no m
tion of any kind had been experienced since Joh
experiment. At length three or four days passed b
the proper time for the *conducta's* arrival; provisio
becoming exceedingly scarce; ammunition had be
pended freely; no thought for the morrow had
possession of their minds, and everything went on
hap-hazard way of thoughtless Mexicans. No a
was made to send a party in quest of the lost trai
was any economy exercised. Two or three days
passed, and they were on the verge of starvation.
surrounding forests of heavy pines still furnishe
and turkeys, and other game in abundance, bu
ammunition was becoming exceedingly scarce.
dilemma some of the miners climbed Ben Moore,
gave a distinct view of the extensive plain reach
and beyond the Mimbres river, but no sign of th
ducta was visible. It was then ordered that a well-
party should set out and discover its fate, but thos
were to be left behind resolved to go also, as they
otherwise be forced to remain without means of d
or provisions. On a given day every man, woma
child residing in the Copper Mines took their depa
but they never reached their place of destination.
relentless Apaches had foreseen all these trouble
taken measures accordingly. The party left, but
bones, with the exception of only four or five, lie b
ing upon the wide expanse between the Copper Mi
Santa Rita and the town of Chihuahua. Such
narrative given me by an intelligent Mexican, w
afterward met in Sonora. From that time for mor
eighty years, the Apache had remained the unmo
master of this his great stronghold. This long in
of quiescence was rudely interrupted by the adv

the military escort to the Boundary Commission, whic immediately commenced repairing the half-ruined pr sidio, and rendering some fifty small adobe building habitable for the members of the Commission. Thes proceedings were watched with great interest and un feigned anxiety by the Apaches, who frequently aske whether we intended to remain at the Copper Mines, an as frequently received a reply in the negative. The res object of our stay was explained to them; but they coul not conceive that people should take so much pains t build houses and render them comfortable only for short residence, to be again abandoned at the very perio when men could live in the open air without disquietude

Shortly afterward, the whole Commission, numberin some two hundred and fifty well-armed men, arrived making a total force of over three hundred men. Thi odds was more than the Apaches could face, with any prospect of success, and they relapsed into the bette part of valor, under the advice of Mangas Colorado an his leading warriors. The gentle nomads pitched thei main camp about two miles from the Copper Mines, an made frequent visits to observe our movements and t practice their skill in begging.

Although the Copper Mine, or Mimbres Apaches, hav signalized themselves by many of the boldest and mos daring exploits, they are not physically comparable t the Mescalero, Jicarilla and Chiricahui branches of th same tribe. But what they lack in personal strength they make up in wiliness and endurance. No amount o cold, hunger or thirst seems to have any appreciabl effect upon an Apache. Whatever his sufferings, no complaint or murmur is ever heard to escape his lips, and h is always ready to engage in any enterprise which promises a commensurate reward. Ten Apaches will under-

take a venture which will stagger the cour
of a hundred Yumas, Pimos or Navajoes,
last mentioned tribe is an undoubted branch
race, as will be shown in a subsequent chap
ning of the Apache is only equaled by hi
audacity with which he executes his proje
success is chuckled over with undissembled
whole tribe, the actors only assuming an
air, as if wholly disconnected with the m
conversation is always carried on in low to
one person ever presumes to speak at a ti
no interruption to the speaker's remarks;
ceases another takes the word, and either
dorses the opinions of his predecessor. Du
conversation on indifferent topics they sep
eral small knots, and in each the above ru
observed.

I had selected the most lovely spot in
the site of my tent, which was some six h
distant from the rest, and shut out from sig
vening hillock. At this place the stream
handsome basin ten yards across, and with
I had built a sort of dam, which raised the
basin to the depth of about three and a
formed a delicious bathing pool, which w
a very large and spreading cottonwood
place the Apaches frequently congregated
able numbers, maintaining a lively conv
enabling me to make many observations
otherwise have done. As I was the only m
Commission with whom they could conv
became their head-quarters during their visi
almost daily for several consecutive mon
amicable relations were broken up by thei
rascality and treachery.

ge and nerve
although the
of the Apache
er. The cun-
skill and the
ts, and every
gusto by the
unconcerned
atter. Their
es, and only
e. There is
but when he
replies or in-
ing a general
rate into sev-
es are strictly

he valley for
ndred yards
t by an inter-
idened into a
a little labor
water in the
alf feet, and
s shaded by
ee. At this
in consider-
rsation, and
I could not
ember of the
rse, my tent
s, which were
hs, until our
irrepressible

CHAPTER IV.

Journey to Sonora.—Adventure with Apaches.—Fronteras.—Me
Indians.—Gen. Carasco.—Janos.—Mexican Policy toward
Carasco's Raid.—Gandara, Monteverde and Urea.—Death
Arispe.—Apache Prisoners.—Mexican Guard.—Apaches Att
can Train.—Curious Style of Pursuit.—Return to the Co
Americans Attacked by Apaches.—Traits of Apache Characte

WERE I to diverge from the proposed plan o
only what appertains directly to the elucidation
character, etc., this work might be continued
series of volumes; but the object of the writer
dense his remarks to such incidents as have rel
to the various Indian tribes he encountered in
of nine years experience among them.

In May, the Commissioner resolved on a jou
Sonora, to ascertain whether supplies of corn, flo
and cattle, could be depended upon from that
the use of the Commission operating along it
frontier, and also for other objects immediatel
the welfare of the body under his orders, and
cution of the work committed to his charge.
afternoon of the third day we camped at a pl
several holes had been dug by previous trav
being full of sweet water they offered us the fir
ment of the kind we had enjoyed for forty-eig
The country for a long distance was a perfect
broken even by rocks or trees, with here an
shrub, but none over eighteen inches high.
place, on a subsequent occasion, an incident il

of the Apache race occurred, and it
though having no connection with
sake of condensation.

Several years after accompanying
came necessary for a small party of
told, to visit Sonora for provisions, an
I served as guide. One evening w
place mentioned above, and again fo
famishing party and their animals.
as we had been without water for near
dian signs in abundance had been ob
day, and we were all alive to the imp
the strictest watch; accordingly two
guard at a time. Richard Purdy an
first watch, each one occupying a flan
tainly not a large one, but of the
Knowing the nature of the savages,
we should not walk our posts, but c
much as possible and keep a sharp
nightfall, Purdy and myself took th
each shrub within pistol range, and
positions flat down in the grass, each
by a small bush. There was no moon
light enabled us to perceive objects
The evening passed quietly, and at
called two more of our comrades,
places, after having pointed out to the
At two o'clock, A. M., we were agai
guard, and each one took his position
had elapsed when it appeared to me
bush had changed position somewha
create a false alarm and be laughed
merely determined to watch it with
My suspicions and precaution were

it is related here, al-
our march, for the

Mr. Bartlett, it be-
f Americans, five all
and knowing the road
we encamped at the
found water for our
It was a God-send,
arly sixty hours. In-
observed during the
portance of keeping
o were placed upon
and myself took the
ank of the camp, cer-
utmost importance.
, it was agreed that
conceal ourselves as
rp lookout. Before
the exact bearings of
quietly assumed our
man being sheltered
on, but a bright star-
ts at some distance.
at eleven o'clock we
s, who assumed our
hem our precautions.
in roused to resume
on. Scarcely an hour
e that a certain small
at; but not liking to
d at for my pains, I
th earnest attention.
amply rewarded by

perceiving the bush to approach, very
but still unmistakably. I dared not c
got my rifle to bear, as nearly as possib
of the bush. When I thought my ai
tolerably sure of my sights, I pulled t
shot was followed by the yells of some
who had approached within thirty pace
covering their heads with grass and cra
bellies. Our comrades jumped to the
menced shooting at the Indians, who
volley into our camp and left us mas
We lost one horse, killed, and had
wounded; but a search developed th
moving bush lying dead, with a hole th
Without waiting for dawn the animals w
got ready and the party again started o
that the Apaches might get ahead and
some dangerous pass or cañon.

Accompanying the Commissioner, in th
we arrived at Agua Prieta, from whence
with Mr. Thurber and Mr. Stewart to d
of Fronteras, and ascertain whether it c
with wagons. Mounting our horses we p
line for the supposed site of the town,
some chapparel and over broken ridges,
upon an extensive and beautiful plain,
galloped with free rein. About half
sundown, we discovered a few thin co
ascending to the right of our road, an
from the top of a slight eminence about
tant. A few minutes brought us to th
could perceive no inhabitants about th
plain, but raising our eyes to the hill, w
population of some nine hundred souls, b

dred soldiers, huddled together in
had taken us for Apaches, and
presidio and protection of the mi
discovered that we were America
ced their wonder at our hardiho
termed it, in penetrating the co
party. This fact will give the re
abject terror with which the poor
tiers of Sonora, Chihuahua and
Apache Indians.

To persons not aware of the cau
appear as rank cowardice; but,
charge would be of the masses, ye
edged that there are notable excep
on the northern frontier are the v
of their countrymen. Living in
themselves in some manner never
certained by any other people, a
arms or ammunition, and brought
infancy to entertain the most abje
the Apaches, they are forever after
selves of the belief that an Apache
but some terrible ogre against wh
tend, and who is only to be avoide
by unconditional submission.

At Fronteras I met with Gen.
ernor of Sonora, and an old ene
my lot to confront during the Me
eral received us with marked hos
offered us refreshments of which
need, and dispatched runners to
way into the town. During the e
lasted into the "wee sma' hours
conversation turned upon the b

n evident alarm. They
fled in dismay to the
ilitary; but when they
ans, nothing could ex-
hood and folly, as they
ountry with so small a
ader some idea of the
r Mexicans on the fron-
d Durango regard the

ses, this timidity would
s, however true such a
et it must be acknowl-
ptions. The Mexicans
very lowest and poorest
hovels and sustaining
r yet determined or as-
almost wholly without
t up from their earliest
ect dread and horror of
r unable to divest them-
e warrior is not a man,
om it is useless to con-
ed by flight or appeased

Carasco, Military Gov-
my whom it had been
exican war. The Gen-
spitality and kindness;
h we stood greatly in
show Mr. Bartlett the
evening's session, which
s ayont the twal," the
attle of Cerro Gordo,

where the General commanded
covered that he barely escaped
Discussing the character of the
of the Mexican Government in th
made the following remarks:

"There is a small town named
near the eastern boundary of Son
have for several years been recei
rations by the Government of th
same Indians were at the time
Mexicans of Sonora. Not being
virtue of a policy which feeds Ind
they might prey upon and destr
other, I concluded that my duty w
wherever I could find him. Actin
I waited until the allotted time f
Janos to obtain their regular qua
forced marches at night, succeede
just as the carnival was at its heig
dred and thirty, and took about ni
pally women and children. Col.
the State of Chihuahua, was so e
that he made formal complaint to
ment, which, however, after some
proved of my course."

I expressed much astonishment
affairs, when Carasco added: "It i
territory is enormous, and our G
cannot extend its protecting arms th
of the country. Whole provinces
themselves, except in the matter of
run to ruin. It is to this cause tha
mentos are attributed. The richest
distant States is actual lord of the S

set the Government at defianc
to reduce him to subordinatio
stance in point. During th
Gandara loaned the sum of
lars to the Supreme Governm
edgements for that amount,
ten per cent. per annum.
administration of Peña y Pe
took place in Sonora, in wh
Manuel Monteverde were the
lies were as deadly rivals as
Capulet; and when the votin
claimed the election. As u
Supreme Government for
moned its forces and engag
was backed by his numerou
Yaqui Indians, while Monte
of many prominent Sonorian
ago tribes. War raged for
verde applied to the General
Gen. Urea was sent with a
ulars to suppress Gandara,
At this stage of the procee
the Supreme Government
hundred thousand dollars,
were not forthcoming, he w
British Government. This
soon after Gandara was pu
emanating from the Secreta
Urea had been operating wi
thority, and that if Gandar
was at liberty to suspend h
oughly frightened Urea, w
the capital."

ce, because it costs so much
on. I will give you an in-
he American war, Manuel
four hundred thousand dol-
nent, receiving its acknowl-
with interest at the rate of
After the war, during the
ña, an election for Governor
which Manuel Gandara and
e competitors. These fami-
the houses of Romeo and
ng was over, each candidate
sual, neither applied to the
arbitration, but each sum-
ged in civil war. Gandara
us friends, peons, and the
everde enlisted the interests
ns, and the Opatah and Pap-
r a long time, until Monte-
l Government for protection.
force of three thousand reg-
, and for a time succeeded.
dings, Gandara called upon
to refund his loan of four
threatening that if payment
would assign his claim to the
threat had its effect, and
nt in possession of an order,
ary of War, to the effect that
without proper warrant of au-
ra could catch that officer, he
him by the neck. This thor-
who immediately returned to

"Now," added Carasco, "
icate position in which I fi
the military command of So
neither men nor money. I
accounts of dreadful Apache
massacred; women and chi
horses and property destro
laid waste and abandoned.
forced contributions from t
poor, determined they shou
terests. This makes me unp
I expect, some day, to be ass
behalf." Prophetic words!
was taken off by poison; so,

Wending our way from Fr
the former capital of Sonora,
At the time of our visit the p
hundred inhabitants; but no
jecture the terror felt by the
ever it was announced that th
second day after our arrival
warriors and three women—w
a strong guard of twenty-five
town jail to await their ultim
afterward the rain poured do
was exceedingly dark and stor
thunder shook the solid hills,
most vivid lightning inspire
The Mexican guard over th
and lighted their cigaritos, or
monte. The doors were secur
to pass the watch away with as
stances would permit. A lit
peculiar noises were heard a

repeated with an emphasis which compelled attention. Instinctively the guard knew that these noises proceeded from Apaches who were in quest of their incarcerated friends, and the fact was quickly made apparent by the prisoners, who commenced a chant in their native tongue loud enough to be heard outside. Here was a dilemma. The Indians were undoubtedly watching the door with intense interest, and no one dared go forth in that impenetrable gloom to face the savage foe. The force of the enemy was unknown. The citizens could not be relied upon for aid; no one would come to their assistance if attacked; they only numbered eight men and a sergeant, and they were panic-stricken. Perceiving this state of affairs, the Apache prisoners boldly advanced and demanded to be let out, at the same time giving fearful yells to apprise their friends of their designs, which were seconded by repeated strokes of heavy stones against the door. In their overpowering terror the guard mustered its whole strength, opened the door slightly and permitted their savage charge to leave. It is needless to add that they were never seen more. This is no figment of the brain, but the real, undisguised fact, and is recorded for the purpose of showing how completely the Apaches have control of the Mexican race upon the frontier.

Another incident illustrative of this supremacy occurred in the same town. A band of fifteen Apaches pursued a pack train and overtook it within three hundred yards of Arispe. The *arrieros* saved themselves by speedy flight, but the train was plundered and the mules driven off. Within an hour nearly two hundred armed men assembled with the avowed purpose of pursuing the savages and recovering the plunder. I happened to be on the Plaza at the time, and had just before observed the Indians making for the mountains lying east of the town. Which way did they go? asked the Mexican leader. I pointed out the direction, and also called his attention to the volume of dust raised by the retreating savages. He thanked me, placed himself at the head of his column, cried out, "*Marchamos valientes*"—let us march, brave fellows—and took a course the very opposite of the one pointed out. I then and there made up my mind, that if a similar affair should ever happen where I was, and a Mexican should inquire the route of the Indians, I would indicate the opposite to the one actually taken.

On our return from Sonora we met a force of two hundred Mexican soldiers in the Guadalupe Pass, who informed us that a party of ten Americans had been waylaid by the Apaches near the town of Janos, in Chihuahua, and that one was killed and three others wounded, the panic-stricken survivors saving themselves by precipitate flight. I felt convinced that this villainy had been perpetrated by the Copper Mine Apaches, who had been so seemingly friendly with us, but could not substantiate the charge. Subsequent revelations satisfied me that my suspicions were well founded, for soon after our arrival at the Copper Mines Mr. Bartlett sounded Mangas Colorado on the subject, but he denied any knowledge whatever of the affair; yet two days afterward admitted that he knew about it, and said that it had been done by some bad young men over whom he had no control.

An Apache is trained from his earliest infancy to regard all other people as his natural enemies. He is taught that the chief excellence of man is to outwit his fellows. He is made to feel that the highest honors are bestowed upon him who is master of the greatest amount of rascality. The favors of the women are lavished upon the most adroit thief, because his dexterity enables him to furnish a more copious supply to their wants and caprices. As they never engage in any pursuit except that of war and the chase, all their worldly goods are the results of their skill and proficiency in these vocations. Polygamy being an institution among them, the man who can support or keep, or attract by his power to keep, the greatest number of women, is the man who is deemed entitled to the greatest amount of honor and respect. Gianatah is a great brave, said one in my hearing—does he not keep seven squaws? and yet Gianatah was not, so far as personal bravery goes, the leading warrior of his band; but he was the most dexterous thief.

After our return to the Copper Mines, I was sitting in front of my tent one afternoon, writing a letter, when an Apache approached and for some reason regarded me attentively.

"What are you doing?" he at length inquired.

"Talking to my friends at home."

"But how can you talk to them so far off?"

"I will tell you. When the Apache desires to indicate speed he makes the figure of a bird; if he wishes to denote something beautiful or sweet, he delineates a flower; if he desires to express sloth, he makes the figure of a tortoise. These facts you know; but we do not use those symbols, and in their place we have agreed upon certain characters, which being put together make words and indicate ideas. For instance, you see we make such marks; well, I send this paper to my friends, and they know just what these marks mean, the same as you would know what a bird or a tortoise meant; because we have all agreed upon a distinct and special interpretation." These ideas were expressed to him in Spanish with great distinctness, and repeated until he seemed to comprehend their gist.

The savage pondered for a while, and then said: "I do not believe you; those characters all seem alike; nobody can distinguish any difference among many of them; you are trying to fool me, and make me believe you are a great medicine man."

"Indian," I answered, "I will give you proof. You see yonder man? He is the sutler. I will give you a note to him, authorizing you to receive a piece of tobacco; he is at least four hundred yards away, and cannot know of this conversation. If he gives you the tobacco on the reception of my note, you must believe."

"Very good; my white-eyed brother speaks well. I will make the trial, and will see if he says truth."

The note was written and delivered to my copper-colored friend, who started off on a brisk trot until he reached the sutler, to whom he delivered his order. Having read it, the sutler handed him a piece of tobacco, which seemed greatly to excite his astonishment. My friend looked at the weed, then scratched his head and looked again, in undisguised wonderment, advancing toward my tent steadily. When within twenty yards, I noticed his eyes gleam with suppressed satisfaction, and hastily coming up, he said:

"Look here, white man, you try to make a fool of poor Apache. You and the other man made this thing up beforehand, to force me into the belief that you are a great medicine. Now, if you want me to believe you, just write another letter for another piece of tobacco, and if he gives it to me, then I will believe."

It is needless to add that the cunning ruse of the Apache to secure two pieces of tobacco, did not succeed.

Although my tent was so far removed from the rest of the Commission as to render me isolated from the protection of my comrades, I never experienced any alarm, as I possessed two very large and fine dogs, and was ac-

companied by my servant, José, a faithful and br
ican boy, of some nineteen years of age. My
consisted of four six-shooters, two rifles, a dou
reled shot gun, two bowie-knives, and plenty o
nition for each weapon. I could discharge twe
shots without reloading, and backed by José
faithful dogs, which kept the strictest watch at
was satisfied that a moderate band of Indians
kept at bay until assistance arrived. This fanci
ity was destroyed after a few weeks, by a circu
which will be related in a future chapter; but it
very strong motives to induce my relinquishme
most pleasant location at the Copper Mines.

e Mex-
rmory
le-bar-
ammu-
-eight
nd my
ight, I
uld be
secur-
stance
quired
of the

CHAPTER V.

Mangas Colorado.—His Personal Appearance, Power, and Influence.—Ind
Forces at the Copper Mines.—The Navajoes.—Their Appearance and S
sequent Acts.—Their Schemes Foiled.—Mangas in Full Uniform.—Stra
Mode of Attire.—Inez Gonzales.—Her Rescue.—New Mexican Trader
Summary Proceedings.—Story of Inez.—March into Sonora.—Santa Cru
Restoration of Inez.—Her subsequent History.—Tanori.

Mangas Colorado, or Red Sleeves, was, undoubtedl
the most prominent and influential Apache who h
existed for a century. Gifted with a large and powerf
frame, corded with iron-like sinews and muscles, a
possessed of far more than an ordinary amount of bra
strength, he succeeded, at an early age, in winning
reputation unequaled in his tribe. His daring exploit
his wonderful resources, his diplomatic abilities, and h
wise teachings in council soon surrounded him with
large and influential band, which gave him a sort
prestige and sway among the various branches of h
race, and carried his influence from the Colorado river
the Guadalupe mountains. Throughout Arizona a
New Mexico, Mangas Colorado was a power in the lan
Yet he could assume no authority not delegated to hi
by his people. He never presumed to speak for the
as one having authority, but invariably said he wou
use his influence to perform certain promises and engag
ments. Mangas, in one of his raids into Sonora, carri
off a handsome and intelligent Mexican girl, whom h
made his wife, to the exclusion of his Apache squaw
This singular favoritism bred some trouble in the trib

for a short time, but was suddenly ende challenging any of the offended brothers his discarded wives. Two accepted the w were killed in fair duel. By his Mexican had three really beautiful daughters, an diplomatic ability, he managed to wive one of the Navajoes; another with the leadin Mescalero Apaches, and the third with th the Coyoteros. By so doing, he acquire influence in these tribes, and, whenever he obtain their assistance in his raids. His he six feet; his head was enormously large, bold forehead, a large acquiline nose, a m mouth, and broad, heavy chin. His eye small, but exceedingly brilliant and flashin any excitement—although his outside de imperturbable as brass. This is the man Copper Mines; but as his name will be me times in the course of this narrative, in co his acts, no more need be added at prese immediate counselors and attachés we Ponce, Cuchillo Negro, Coletto Amarillo, Pedro Azul. These were all appellation Mexicans, and not their Apache names, learned.

The Indian force about the Copper Mi according to my calculations, to four hun who were no match for the three hundre and thoroughly organized Americans at the or five weeks elapsed in amicable interc Apaches; but from occasional expressio vinced that Mangas had sought aid for t expelling us at the earliest possible mome however, occurred to strengthen my sus

by Mangas
r relatives of
ger, and both
wife Mangas
through his
with the chief
man of the
war chief of
a very great
esired, could
ght was about
with a broad,
ost capacious
were rather
when under
eanor was as
ve met at the
tioned many
nection with
t. His most
Delgadito,
El Chico, and
bestowed by
hich I never

s amounted,
red warriors,
well armed
place. Four
urse with the
, I felt con-
e purpose of
t. Nothing,
cions, and I

had almost dismissed them entirely, when
prised one morning to see the camp full of
ages, who proved to be Navajoes, and were
terms with the Apaches. The new comer
looking, physically, but carried in their face
less yet unmistakable impress of low cu
treachery, which I afterward found to be
traits of their tribe. Although they are o
Apache race, speaking identically the sam
and observing the same general habits of
respects, yet they are far inferior in point
prowess, skill and intelligence. Five Apac
will undertake and accomplish an exploi
fifty Navajoes would venture to perform.
Apache will go off, unaided, and commit a
bery or murder which twenty Navajoes w
from attempting.

Our new visitors were all mounted on small,
active and wiry looking horses, which they
remarkable ease and grace. Feeling satisfied
mind that they had come there at the request
Colorado, I advised Col. Craig of my suspicio
in turn, imparted the idea to Mr. Bartlett.
that four hundred Navajo warriors were en
the Gila river, only thirty miles distant, and
the Indian Commissariat could not support
number for any length of time, and that no
blage would have been got together in that
the country unless for some determined pur
hunting grounds around the Copper Mines
special inducement, as they must have crossed
and fifty miles of better hunting country to a
they then were. There was no trading to rely
on special incentive other than to help Man

ing us out of the place, or assisting h
animals.

Their visits were very regular for thr
when, probably finding us too strong
on our guard to attack, they disappeare
return some weeks after and help to car
and mules. During their stay, my ten
borhood were crowded with these savage
a multitude of questions, but never a
mine. This reticence on their part tau
and I soon learned to endure their prese
equanimity and *nonchalance*, smoking
their queries with a simple nod or wa
My six-shooters and knife were always
during these interviews, and my boy Jo
part of the tent with a Sharp's carbine
reled gun, well loaded with buckshot, w
I never permitted a Navajo to get behin
treating them with courtesy, gave the
that I had no special feeling on the subj
their visits as a matter of course.

It was a noticeable fact that neither M
or any of his leading men ever mixed w
while in our camp, and judging this co
strained and unnatural, Mr. Wiems an
mined to watch them. In pursuance of
saddled our horses one evening after the
tired, for they were never permitted in
set, and very quietly picked our way t
about two miles distant at that time.
eminence that overlooked them, we a
glasses, and, by the light of their fire
Mangas and the principal men in close
the leading Navajoes. This fact was

im to steal our

e or four days,
and too much
l for a while, to
y off our horses
t and its neigh-
s, who asked me
nswered one of
ght me a lesson,
nce with perfect
and replying to
ve of the hand.
upon my person
gé sat in the back
and double bar-
ithin easy reach.
l me, and, while
n to understand
ect, but regarded

Iangas Colorado
ith the Navajoes
nduct somewhat
d myself deter-
f this object, we
Indians had re-
camp after sun-
o their bivouac,
Gaining a slight
pplied our field
, distinctly saw
conference with
also reported to

Col. Craig, who took additional precauti
the effect of relieving us from the prese
comers. In after years, it was my lot to
tensive and sanguinary acquaintance with
the opportunity was improved to the utmo
of them were subjected to my control, an
ber of them remembered me from the tim
Copper Mines. In several conversations
of coming to aid Mangas, and assisting
rid of his unwelcome intruders; and o
they frankly admitted that they had visi
Mines with that intention. Mangas had s
to tell them that a large body of Ameri
into his country; that they were very
mules, cotton cloth, beads, knives, pis
ammunition; that he was not strong eno
and plunder us himself, and therefore req
in which case one half the plunder was
the event of success. Lured by these
urged by their chief, who was the son-in-
four hundred of them had come down t
nowned warrior. They met in council,
come in and spy out the land before com
ations, little supposing that we would dis
ence between them and the Apaches p
matters promise well, a sudden attack w
by their united forces; but if that was
without great loss of life on their part, t
of distressing us by stealing our animals
small parties, was to be adopted. All th
I got from Manuelito and others, at Fort
teen years after our occupation of the Co
Arizona. The subject was frequently ta
remembered as vividly as if it were a thin

Mr. Bartlett, in order to retai
ship of Mangas, had a fine pair of
with a wide red stripe down the o
for that respectable individual.
good field officer's uniform and e
Craig, a new white shirt, black o
pair of new shoes, such as are fu
It was my duty to invest Mang
some difficulty was experienced
his shirt inside of his pants inste
time he made his appearance in *g*
love with his own elegant pers
day he strutted about the camp, t
ers, and as vain of his new dr
feathers. The next day Mangas
pearance; but the day after he ca
wrapped around his waist; his
torn, outside; his uniform coat
one epaulet on his breast, and t
lion down, between the hind b
this guise he fancied himself a
versal admiration; and as he w
turn his eyes over his shoulder
flashes of his posterior ornament
coat, shirt, pants and epaulettes
Indian after his fashion. Mang
away, and the wearer was the fo

On the evening of the 27th o
Bausman, Mr. J. E. Wiems and
front of the sutler's store, whe
resembling a camp fire, about two
near the banks of the creek.
were prohibited from being ther
none of the Commission dwelt i

the supposed friend-
lue pants, ornamented
side of the legs, made
To this were added a
ulettes, given by Col.
vat, and an excellent
nished to our soldiers.
in his new suit, but
getting him to wear
l of outside. After a
nde tenue, evidently in
. During the whole
e envied of all behold-
s as a peacock of his
ailed to put in an ap-
e, with his pantaloons
irt, dirty and partly
uttoned to his chin;
e other fastened, bui-
tons of his coat. In
bject worthy of uni-
ked along, he would
o relish the brilliant
In less than a week,
re sported by another.
s had gambled them
nate winner.

June, 1850, Mr. W.
yself were standing in
we perceived a light,
undred yards distant,
e knew that Indians
fter sundown, and as
that direction, it was

agreed to go and find out who were the
the fire. We approached cautiously, s
selves in a bivouac of Indians and Mex
them was a young and handsome girl, c
tered chemise, with a buckskin skirt, an
thrown over her shoulders. This girl, wh
dian, appeared to be the waitress of the p
she was preparing supper. As our app
been observed, we quietly proceeded to
which was about four yards from the part
the girl, in a low voice, who those peop
seemed evidently alarmed, and refusing
ried away to wait upon her associates. We
she came back, when I told her that it w
us to know who they were; to which she
ger on her lips, and betokened that she
The question was, however, pressed, whe
a whisper that she was a captive, and tha
present had just bought her, and were
her to New Mexico. As this thing was s
ited by the United States laws, we made
diately to Mr. Bartlett and laid the mat
gentleman for his consideration. With
itude Mr. Bartlett communicated the fa
to Col. Craig, and asked that gallant of
to rescue the girl from her unhappy cond
quest was granted as soon as possible, an
was ordered to take a file of men and br
fore the Commissioner. This was done
and the captive placed for the night un
Mr. Bartlett, who assigned her a comfort
placed a proper guard over her quarters.

In the meantime the Apaches had slip
guard was put over the Mexican traders

Next day they were sum
to account for their pos
tentions as to her futur
traders respectively gave
—a very appropriate no
which, being translated,
inappropriate name—and
extracted from these me
the tenor of it went to sh
some fifty others, in unl
Indians, selling them po
change for female Mexic
horses, skins, etc. Mr.
deprive them of the cap
punish the scoundrels, th
mediately afterwards wa
of the Commission, who
any delay in getting out
with imminent danger.
had left the Copper Min

The young captive ga
the eldest child of Jesus
frontier of Sonora. Ab
had left Santa Cruz with
and her friend's brother,
ent at the *grande fiesta*
lena, or, the grand fea
They were protected by
and an ensign. The sec
were ambushed by a la
who killed her uncle and
officer, and carried off h
with the boy. For sever
power, and made to pe

oned before the Commissioner
ssion of the girl, and their in-
disposal. Next morning the
heir names as Peter Blacklaws
nclature—Pedro Archeveque,
eans Peter Archbishop—a very
Faustin Valdes. The testimony
was extremely conflicting, but
that they were engaged, with
ful barter and trade with the
der and arms, probably, in ex-
captives of attractive persons,
artlett felt fully authorized to
e, but having no authority to
were released; they were im-
d upon by several gentlemen
gave them to understand that
that place would be attended
less than twenty minutes they
poorer but wiser men.
her name as Inez Gonzales,
onzales, of Santa Cruz, on the
t nine months previous, she
er uncle, aunt, a female friend
or the purpose of being pres-
Nuestra Senora de la Magda-
of our Lady of Magdalena.
military escort of ten soldiers
d day of their journey they
party of El Pinal Apaches,
ight soldiers, including their
and her two female friends,
months she had been in their
rm all the hard labor of an

Apache squaw, receiving kicks a
One old woman of the tribe, w
made even the warriors quail, h
fancy for Inez, and from that ti
insult or harm so long as she
Her companions in captivity w
chased by a band of New Mex
them off in a northerly directio
heard of them afterwards. A sec
purchased her, with the view of
for speculative and villainous p
rescued by the Commission, every
with each other to extend their p
this poor and suffering girl. A
among us until her restoration to
the sequel of her adventures will

On the morning of the 27th
months from the date of her resc
the Copper Mines, to prosecute
and as it had become necessary
Mr. Bartlett determined upon giv
cation of restoring the fair Inez to
ing mother. After many days' w
our small party was frequently
six, by reason of sending off o
and after having lost our way
necessity of living upon purslain
successive days, we finally arrived
Cruz, on the 22d of September,
quent to leaving the Copper Mine
the 23d, just one year to a day fr
ture, two men were dispatched t
Inez of her safety, and to add
her relations in four or five hou

from town we met a large and joyous party of Mexicans, arrayed in their gaudiest holiday costumes, and headed by the mother of our fair charge. They had come out to welcome her return and release from captivity among the Apaches, a thing never before known to have occurred. Mr. Bartlett conceded to me the privilege of placing Inez into the longing arms of her mother, who, after repeated embraces, and amidst alternate tears, prayers, thanksgivings and joyous cries, yielded her place to the strong but inferior claims of other relatives and friends, all of whom ardently and most affectionately embraced her by turns. It was one of the most affecting scenes conceivable, and, in joyous procession, the whole party entered the town, amidst the loudest acclamations of the entire population. Inez immediately entered the church, where the good priest was in attendance, and went through a solemn ceremony and thanksgiving. These scenes and all their attendant circumstances have ever been among the most pleasant in my remembrance. They form a delicious oasis amidst the unpleasant recollections of "man's inhumanity to man." Her own father had been deceased for some years, and the mother of Inez was then married to a man named Ortis, a very excellent, honest and reliable Mexican, who testified quite as much joy at her release from a captivity far worse than death, as if she had been his own child.

The future career of this young and attractive girl, whose fate was so suddenly and providentially changed, is worthy of record.

Some months after the Commission left, on its way toward California, Inez attracted and secured the admiration of a Captain Gomez in the Mexican Regular Army, and, at that time, in command of the frontier town of Tubac. The relaxed state of morals among the Mexicans seemed to warrant the poor girl in becoming his mistress for a time, but he subsequently made amends by marrying her and legitimatizing the two fine boys she bore him. Many years passed before I again saw or heard of Inez, and it was not until the fall of 1862, that I learned, while in Tucson, that she was still alive, but quite unwell. Capt. Gomez had been dead some years, and she was again married to the Alcalde of Santa Cruz, and had borne him two children—a boy and a girl. Having casually learned that I was in Tucson, and an officer in the Union Army, she dispatched me a letter, begging that I would order some one of our physicians to visit and prescribe for her. Of course, the poor girl, in her ignorance, had asked what it was impossible to grant, and I sadly dismissed the subject from my mind.

In 1864, it was again my lot to be within fifty miles of Santa Cruz, when a bold Opatah Indian chief, named Tanori, who had been commissioned as Colonel by Maximilian, had the temerity to cross our frontier with nearly seven hundred men and fire upon the people of the American town of San Gabriel, located two miles north of the dividing line, and fourteen miles from Santa Cruz. The excuse for this outrage was, that he had pursued the Liberal General, Jesus Garcia Morales, across our lines, and that he had not transcended his duty in so doing. Complaint of this raid having been made to me by the town authorities of San Gabriel, I immediately took the saddle, with one hundred and forty troopers, and marched straight to that place. Upon my arrival, I obtained affidavits of all the facts, and, having received permission from the acknowledged authorities of Sonora, determined to pursue Tanori and punish that gentleman for his audacious conduct.

He had retired upon Santa Cruz, whither I followed

without delay; but, hearing of our approach, he ha
tened forward to Imurez with wonderful celerity, an
although the Adjutant, Lieut. Coddington, was di
patched, at speed, to request a delay on his part so th
we could arrange matters, he excused himself by sayin
that "his orders were imperative to reach Ures withou
delay." As a proof with what rapidity the Mexican i
fantry can cover the ground when an enemy is in pu
suit, it is a fact that Tanori, with over six hundred me
mostly infantry, made the march from Santa Cruz t
Imurez, a distance of forty-three miles, in the space
nine hours. He left Santa Cruz at five o'clock in th
morning, and I subsequently learned that he converse
with the party from whom I received my information, i
the town of Imurez, at two o'clock in the afternoon
the same day. About three hundred of his men wer
there with him at the time mentioned.

My trip to Santa Cruz offered me the opportunity t
visit Inez, whom I found to be the respected wife of th
chief and most influential man in that little community
She has an affectionate husband, who is by no mean
cramped for this world's goods; is surrounded by a fin
and promising family of three boys and a girl, and is uni
versally esteemed for her many excellent qualities. I
is needless to state that my reception was most cordi
and enthusiastic. This sequel of her history will un
doubtedly be received with sincere pleasure by all wh
were members of Mr. Bartlett's Commission, and by non
with more interest than Mr. Bartlett and Dr. Webb.

CHAPTER VI.

Rescue of Two Mexican Boys.—War Talk.—Exciting Scene.—Peaceful Termination.—Large Indian Forces.—An Apache killed by a Mexican.—Intense Excitement.—Fearless Conduct of Col. Craig.—The Apaches Pacified.—Another War Talk.—Amicable Result.—Necessity of Firmness and Precaution.

It has already been stated that my tent was pitched several hundred yards from the rest of the Commission, and hidden from the view of my companions by an intervening hillock. This fact rendered me far more cautious than I otherwise would have been. Several days subsequent to the rescue of Inez, the afternoon being exceedingly hot and sultry, I was lying on my cot reading a work borrowed from Dr. Webb, while José was busy in front of the tent, washing some clothes in the pool. A very large number of Apaches were in our camp that day, but had not disturbed me, as was their usual custom. Suddenly, two boys, evidently Mexicans, darted into my tent, got under my cot, and concealed themselves between the side of the tent and the drooping blankets. This visitation, in such an abrupt and irregular manner, excited my surprise, and I asked who they were and what they wanted. "*Somos Mejicanos, caballero, y estamos cautivos con los Apaches, y nos hemos escondido aqui para escaparles. Por Dios no nos rinde otra vez entre ellos,*" which means in English—"We are Mexicans, sir, and we are captives among the Apaches, and we have hidden here to escape them. For God's sake, do not deliver us again among them."

I called to José, and asked: "Are there an
close by."

"No, sir," he replied, "but they are co
way."

I instantly jumped from the cot, thrust two
ers in my belt, took two more in my hands, on
ordered José to sling the carbine over his sho
carry the double-barreled gun in his hands, a
the boys to keep close to my side—one on the
the other on the left—I sallied from the tent w
termination to take these captives to the Com
for his disposal.

We had not proceeded twenty yards before
some thirty or forty surrounded us, and with
words and gestures, demanded the instant
their captives; but, having made up my mind,
termined to carry out my intention at all ris
José to place his back to mine, cock his gun
the first Indian he saw bend his bow or give
tive hostility; while, with a cocked pistol in
we went circling round, so as to face all parts
in succession, at the same time warning the
keep their distance. In this manner we ac
about two hundred yards, when my situatio
ceived by several gentlemen of the Commi
drawing their pistols, they advanced to my
Indians relinguished their attempts and acco
peaceably to the Commissioner, to whom I s
the boys and detailed the affair. The boys w
ively named Savero Aredia and José Trinfan,
aged thirteen, and a native of Bacuachi, in S
the latter aged about eleven, and a native of
in the same State. The next day at night,
sent them to the camp of Gen. Garcia Conde

can Commissioner. They were accompanied by a str guard, which delivered them safely to the General, w subsequently restored them to their respective famili much to their wonder and gratification.

Four or five days afterward, Mangas Colorado, Pon Delgadito, Cuchillo Negro, Coletto Amarillo, and so two hundred warriors, together with the fellow w claimed the boys, entered the Copper Mines, to hav "big talk." Mr. Bartlett was not at all displeased to them, and determined to settle the matter at once. T mass of Indians formed themselves in a semicircle, t and three deep, facing the door of the room in which t talk was had, while the principal men and about a do of the Commission, well armed, occupied a large ro in our adobe building. Pipes and tobacco were hand round and a "cloud blown" before the real business the *seance* commenced. About a hundred and fifty the Commission were near at hand with their arms read After a long and profound silence, the conversation w commenced by Mangas Colorado, on the part of t Apaches, and by myself, on the part of the American every expression of the savages, being taken down writing, and then translated to Mr. Bartlett, who di tated a reply, if anything important occurred to him, allowed the interpreter to respond, as the circumstanc would permit. As the succeeding recital of the intervie was originally written out in full by myself, and hande to Mr. Bartlett as the official record, and subsequentl published by him without alteration, I deem myself ju tified in making use of it for this work.

Mangas Colorado spoke and said: "Why did you tak our captives from us?"

Reply.—"Your captives came to us and demanded ou protection."

Mangas Colorado.—"You came to our
were well received. Your lives, your pro
imals were safe. You passed by ones, by
through our country. You went and c
Your strayed animals were always broug
again. Our wives, our women and child
and visited your houses. We were frie
brothers! Believing this, we came am
brought our captives, relying on it that we
and that you would feel as we feel. We c
ing. We came not secretly nor in the nig
in open day, and before your faces, and sh
tives to you. We believed your assurance
and we trusted them. Why did you tak
from us?"

Reply.—"What we have said to you is
not tell lies. The greatness and dignity
forbid our doing so mean a thing. Wh
has said is true and good also. We will
why we took his captives away. Four yea
were at war with Mexico. We know th
make a distinction between Chihuahua
They are now at peace with Chihuahua, b
Sonora. We, in our war, did not make th
The Mexicans, whether living in one or th
are all one nation, and we fought them
When the war was over, in which we conqu
peace with them. They are now our frien
terms of the peace we are bound to prote
told you this when we first came here, and
to cease from hostility against Mexico.
and we grew very friendly; everything we
came in here with your captives. Who w
tives? Mexicans; the very people we told

ountry. You
erty, your an-
vos, by threes
me in peace.
home to you
en came here
nds—we were
ong you and
were brothers
ncealed noth-
t. We came
owed our cap-
of friendship,
our captives

rue. We do
of our nation
t our brother
now tell him
ago, we, too,
the Apaches
and Sonora.
t at war with
t distinction.
other State,
as a nation.
red, we made
s, and by the
t them. We
equested you
Time passed,
t well. You
re those cap-
you we were

bound to protect. We took them from you
them to Gen. Garcia Conde, who will set them
in their own country. We mean to show you
cannot lie. We promised protection to the M
and we gave it to them. We promise friend
protection to you, and we will give them to you
had not done so to Mexico, you would not b
with regard to yourselves. We cannot lie."

During the above conversation, which was ca
in a slow and dignified manner, Ponce was b
very much excited, altogether too much so for an
and being unable to restrain himself any lo
arose, and, with many gesticulations, said:

Ponce.—"Yes, but you took our captives wit
forehand cautioning us. We were ignorant of th
ise to restore captives. They were made pris
lawful warfare. They belong to us. They are o
erty. Our people have also been made captives
icans. If we had known of this thing, we would
come here. We would not have placed that co
in you."

Reply.—"Our brother speaks in anger, and
reflection. Boys and women lose their temper, b
reflect and argue; and he who has reason and ju
his side, wins. No doubt, you have suffered m
the Mexicans. This is a question in which it is i
ble for us to tell who is wrong, or who is right
and the Mexicans accuse each other of being the
sors. Our duty is to fulfill our promise to both.
opportunity enables us to show to Mexico that w
what we say, and when the time comes, we will b
and prompt to prove the good faith of our prom
you."

Ponce.—"I am neither a boy nor a squaw.

man and a brave. I speak with refle
I say. I speak of the wrongs we ha
you now do us." Then, placing his h
he said in a very excited manner—"
any more. Let some one else speak

As this was rather more than I h
immediately placed both hands on
crushing him down on the floor, I s

"I want you to understand that
speak—the only one who can speak
there. Do *you* sit down. You a
brave. I will select a man to spea
Delgadito (beckoning to that warrio
and speak for your nation."

It is impossible to describe the
Ponce, but he saw there was no cha
uttered a word during the session.

Delgadito then arose and said: "
clare the mind of his people."

Reply.—"We wish to explain to c
why we have done this thing, and
the late owner of those captives.
have not acted secretly or in the
open day, and brought your captiv
took them in open day, in obedience
great chief at Washington. The g
tion said: 'You must take all the M
meet among the Apaches and set th
cannot disobey this order, and for
taken away your captives."

Delgadito.—"We cannot doubt the
white brethren. The Americans ar
it, and we believe a brave scorns to
of these captives is poor. He canno

ction. I know what
ve suffered and those
hand on my shoulder,
You must not speak
."

had bargained for, I
his shoulders, and,
aid:

I am the very one to
to you. Now, stay
re a squaw and no
k for the Apaches.
r) do you come here

smothered rage of
nce, and never again

'Let my brother de-

ur Apache brethren
what we can do for
We know that you
dark. You came in
es among us. We
to orders from our
eat chief of our na-
Mexican captives you
em at liberty.' We
this reason we have

words of our brave
braves. *We know*
lie. But the owner
t lose his prisoners,

---

who were obtained at the risk of his life, a
by the blood of his relatives. He justly
captives. We are his friends, and wish t
mand complied with. It is just, and as j
mand it."

Reply.—"We will tell our Apache breth
be done. The captives cannot be restored
missioner cannot buy them. No American
but there is a Mexican in our employ who
buy and restore them to their homes. W
jection that he should do so; and if he is not
some of us will lend him the means."

Delgadito.—"The owner does not wish
wants his captives."

Reply.—"Our brother has already been
cannot be. We do not speak with two ton
up your minds."

A short consultation was then held amon
Apaches, after which Delgadito said: "The
twenty horses for them."

Reply.—"The Apache laughs at his white
thinks him a squaw, and that he can play
with an arrow. Let the Apache say again."

Delgadito.—"The brave who owns these
not want to sell. He has had one of these b
He grew up under him. His heart-string
around him. He is as a son to his old age.
our language, and he cannot sell him. M
buy affection. His heart cannot be sold.
him to string the bow and wield the lance.
boy and cannot sell him."

Reply.—"We are sorry that this thing sho
feel for our Apache brother, and would lik
his heart. But it is not our fault. Our brot

his affection on the child of his
But our duty is stern. We cann
our hearts to hurt our friends;
children, and the duty of the la
part with them,' we would. Le
flect, and name his price."

Delgadito.—"What will you g

To which Mr. Bartlett replied:
you."

The whole conclave then bro
the Commissary's stores, where
blankets and sheetings, to the v
fifty dollars were laid out for the
more than Apache cupidity could
soon closed, and the affair passe
was never forgotten, and I felt
would come when they would end
concealed vengeance. My expec
the result, for they ultimately st
head of animals from the Commi

At this period the band of Ma
ing some three hundred warrio
about four miles distant, while t
bering nearly as many, occupied
bres river, eighteen miles off.
hundred Navajoes occupied the b
twenty-eight miles. We were th
large Indian forces, but took no
tinuing our hunting excursions i
as much apparent indifference as
precaution of taking our six-shoo
munition, as well as our rifles.

On the 6th of July, a Mexican,
the employ of the Commission,

enemy. It is very noble.
not avoid it. It wounds
ut if they were our own
said: 'Part with them;
t our Apache brother re-

ive?"
"Come and I will show

ke up and adjourned to
goods, such as calicoes,
lue of two hundred and
ir acceptance. This was
stand; the bargain was
away in peace. But it
positive that the time
eavor to wreak their ill-
tations were justified by
ple nearly two hundred
ssion.
gas Colorado, number-
rs, remained encamped
at of Delgadito, num-
the valley of the Mim-
At the same time four
nks of the Gila, distant
s placed between three
notice of the fact, con-
n twos and threes with
ever, and adopting the
ters and plenty of am-

named Jesus Lopez, in
had a dispute with an

Apache, which terminated by the M
savage friend. Large numbers of
Mangas Colorado and several prom
our camp at the time, but in a mo
their active ponies and were fleeing in
Craig called upon me to follow him,
and up the hills after the Apaches,
go, that we were friends, that the m
a prisoner, and that full justice wo
After many persuasions, we induced
fears and come back. The prisone
with chains on his feet in care of th
wounded man was taken to the ho
every assistance. He lingered for
died, surrounded by his friends, who
to the care bestowed upon him. Thi
another talk, which took place a few d
which was performed by his own peop
declined the offer of a coffin and sepu

A large body of Apaches had cong
talk, and they were evidently deter
best of it on this occasion. They
minds to have the blood of the slayer
ceeded would have attributed their
our part. Mr. Bartlett was quite
American law only should have wei
pared for a lively scene. On that day
and Sutler's stores were closed, and
stood ready for active duty at a mome
smoking process over, the Apaches we
lows, the same rules being observed
occasion.

Commissioner.—"I feel sad, as wel
cans here, and sympathize with our A

the death of one of their
The dead man was our frie
know that he committed no
provoke the attack upon hi
must remember that it was
ican he died. It was by th
ployed by the Commission
duty to see justice done
ished. I am here in com
tracing the dividing line be
country of the Americans
explained this to you befo
it. Beyond this I have no
the Americans lives far, ve
From him I received my or
obey. I cannot interfere in
an Indián, a Mexican, or an
great chief who lives at San
of all New Mexico. This
laws of the Americans. He
when a man has been found
I will send the murderer
will try him, and if found g
according to American laws
is the disposition I will m
have a right to do."

To my surprise, Ponce ar
is all very good. The Apac
are their friends. The Apa
cans say is true. They kno
speak with two tongues. Th
told them a lie. They kno
say. But the Apaches will
the murderer has been pu

braves. We are all friends,
nd, and we regret his loss. I
offence; that he even did not
m. But our Apache brethren
not by the hand of an Amer-
at of a Mexican, though em-
ner. For this reason it is my
you, and the murderer pun-
mand of the party engaged in
tween the United States—the
—and Mexico. I have fully
re, and you now understand
powers. The great chief of
y far, toward the rising sun.
ders, and those orders I must
punishing any man, whether
American. There is another
ta Fé. He is the Governor
great chief administers the
alone can inflict punishment
guilty. To this great chief
of our Apache brother. He
uilty, will have him punished
. This is all I can do. Such
ake of this man. It is all I

ose to reply; he said: "This
hes know that the Americans
ches believe what the Ameri-
w that the Americans do not
ey know that you have never
w that you will do what you
not be satisfied to hear that
nished in Santa Fé. They

---

want him punished here, at the
band of the dead brave may see
all the Apaches may see him put
made the sign of suspending b
Apaches will see and know that
do justice to them."

Commissioner.—"I will propo
Apaches. It is to keep the mur
now see him; to make him work,
the wife and family of your dead
paid in blankets, in cotton cloth
anything else the family may lik
that is now due to the man, a
month I will give them twenty
money. When the cold season c
children will come in and rece
cloth to keep them warm, and co
ger."

Ponce.—"You speak well. Y
But money will not satisfy an Ap
brave! Thousands will not drown
woman for the loss of her son.
American for the murder of his
pay you, Señor Commissioner, for
No; money will not bury your
ours. The mother of the dead
of his murderer. Nothing else
wants no money. She wants no
corn. Would money satisfy me (
the death of my son? No! I wou
the murderer. *Then* I would be s
be willing to die myself. I woul
feel the grief which the loss of my

Reply.—"Your words are good.

heart of feeling. I feel as you do. All the Americans feel as you do. Our hearts are sad at your loss. We mourn with this poor woman. We will do all we can to assist her and her family. I know that neither money nor goods will pay for her loss. I do not want the Apaches, my brothers, so to consider it. What I propose is for the good of this family. My wish is, to make them comfortable. I desire to give them the aid of which they are deprived by the loss of their protector. If the prisoner's life is taken, your desire for revenge is satisfied. Law and justice are satisfied; but this poor woman gets nothing. She and her family remain poor. They have no one to labor for them. Will it not be better to provide for their wants?"

A short interchange of opinions occurred at this period of the proceedings, and the mother of the murdered man was called on for her decision. Acting under the influence of the leading warriors, whose object is stated at the opening of this chapter, she vehemently demanded the blood of her son's slayer, and stated her determination to be satisfied with nothing else. In accordance with this decision Ponce resumed and said:

"If an Apache should take the life of an American, would you not make war on us and take many Apache lives?"

Reply.—"No; I would demand the arrest of the murderer, and would be satisfied to have him punished as the Apaches punish those who commit murder. Did not a band of Apaches attack a small party of Americans, very recently, on the Janos road? Did they not kill one of them and wound three others with their arrows? And did they not take from them all their property? You all know this to be true, and I know it to be true. I passed near the spot where it took place, three days afterward.

The Apaches did not even bury their victim. They left him lying by the wayside, food for the crows and the wolves. Why do not these Americans revenge themselves on you for this act? They are strong enough. They have many warriors, and in a few days can bring a thousand more here. But there would be no justice in that. The Americans believe this murder was committed by your bad men—by cowards. The Apaches have bad men among them; but you who are now among us are our friends, and we will not demand redress of you. Yet, as I told you before, you must endeavor to find the men who killed our brother, and punish them. Our animals feed in your valleys. Some of your bad men might steal them, as they have already done; but the Americans would not make war on you for this. We hold you responsible, and shall call on you to find them and bring them back, as you have done. While the Apaches continue to do this, the Americans will be their friends and their brothers. But if the Apaches take our property and do not restore it, they can no longer be the friends of the Americans. War will then follow; thousands of soldiers will take possession of your lands, your grazing valleys, and your watering places. They will destroy every Apache warrior they find, and take your women and children captives."

This rather menacing speech, with the firmness and determination evinced, brought our copper colored and belligerent visitors to a proper sense of the case, and after considerable "pow-wow" among themselves, the mother of the deceased agreed to leave the punishment of the murderer to the determination of our own laws, and to receive as equivalent for his loss all the money due the prisoner, and twenty dollars a month, the amount of his wages, while we remained at the Copper Mines.

During the foregoing talk I learned the important fac that coolness and quiet determination will almost alway overawe and subdue an Indian, provided the right is o your side. But however much he may yield, one ma make sure that he will seize the first favorable opportunit to "get even." Should such an opportunity never occu it becomes his cherished object to wreak his vengeanc on the next comer, entirely regardless of his antecedent For this reason the utmost caution is always necessary because, although one may feel wholly guiltless of act o intention against the savages, he is held strictly responsible by them for the acts and intentions of his predecessors.

CHAPTER VII.

Jornada del Muerto. — Socorro. — Lieut. Campbell. — Terrific Ride for Life. — Splendid Horse. — Narrow Escape. — Caring for a Horse. — Apache Visits. — Treacherous Nature.

Some time after the events above recorded, it became necessary for me to visit the town of Socorro, in New Mexico, for the purpose of assisting in the purchase of sheep. It was my most excellent fortune to possess a horse whose equal I have never seen. With high courage and almost fabulous powers of endurance; strong, swift and handsome, I had made him a special pet, and nobly did he answer my appeal when occasion demanded.

At that time Fort Craig had no existence, and the space between Doña Ana and Socorro—a distance of one hundred and twenty-five miles—is a large desert, well supplied with fine grama grass in some portions, but absolutely destitute of water or shade for ninety-six miles. This intervening strip of territory is known by the unattractive appellation of the *Jornada del Muerto*, or the Dead Man's Journey. Why it ever received this title I never distinctly learned, but suppose it was on account of the very numerous massacres committed on it by the Apache Indians. On the east the road is fringed for about sixty miles by the Sierra Blanca, a noted stronghold of that people; and from its heights they are enabled distinctly to perceive any party of travelers coming over the wide and unsheltered expanse of the *Jornada del Muerto*. As the plain affords no opportunity for ambush, they come sweeping upon the unsuspecting immi more than usual numbers, and if successful in t tack, invariably destroy all of the party; for the possible chance of escape, and the Apaches nev any prisoners but women and young children, a become captives for life.

At Socorro was a small American garrison, co of about half a company of the Second Dragoon manded by Lieut. Reuben Campbell, an officer acquaintance I had made during the Mexican w for whom I entertained a sincere regard.

I left Doña Ana about three o'clock A. M., and t leisurely until four in the afternoon, when I un my horse, staked him to a strong picket pin plant field of fine grass, and laid down under the lee s cactus to catch a modicum of shade. At twelv night, I resumed my journey, and reached Socor day about eleven o'clock A. M., having traveled the cool of the night at a much more rapid pace. ing the trip I neither saw an Indian nor an India and here let me add that the Apaches of the Jorn more properly the Mescalero Apaches, were at th in a state of active hostility.

Most pleasantly did I pass two days with Lieut. bell, rehearsing scenes and incidents of the Mexic and each metaphorically "shouldering his crutch t how fields were won." Having refreshed myse rested my noble horse, I took leave of Campbell morning of the third day, at three o'clock, when w the *doch and dorrish* with mutual wishes for each welfare.

My trip up had been unaccompanied by any ev interest, and I sincerely hoped that my journey would be equally tame and spiritless; but this was be. I saved my noble beast all I could, frequently dismounting and leading him by the bridle, so as to retain his strength and speed in case of necessity. In this way we jogged on until about three o'clock in the afternoon, by which time we had accomplished about fifty miles, leaving some seventy-five yet to go. The sun was intensely oppressive, and glared like a shield of red-hot brass. A friendly bush, surrounded with fine grass, and standing about one hundred yards to the left of the hard and splendid natural road which runs through four-fifths of the Jornada, invited me to partake of its modest shade, and I turned my horse in that direction, but was surprised at noticing a column of dust to my left, in the direction of the Sierra Blanca, which had the appearance of being in violent motion, and coming my way. Instinctively I felt that it was caused by Apaches; and I took the precaution to tighten my horse's girths, see that the saddle was properly placed and re-cap my four six-shooters, two of which were in my belt, and two in my holsters. I also untied a Mexican *serape*, or blanket, which was lashed to the after part of my saddle, and doubling it, I passed it over my shoulders and tied it under my chin by a stout buckskin thong. By this time the character of the coming party was unmistakable, and they were evidently bent on cutting me off from the road. My gallant horse seemed to appreciate the condition of affairs almost as well as I, and bounded on like a bird. The pursuing party failed in their first attempt and entered the road about three hundred yards in my rear. Perceiving that my horse was infinitely superior in speed and power, I drew rein to save him all that I could, and allowed the Indians to come within fifty yards. There were some forty of them, and none with fire-arms, but mainly supplied with lances, only five or six of the number carrying bows and arrows. These las jectiles commenced to whistle near me; b heed, keeping steadily on my course, unt trated my blanket; but the effect was co stroyed by the fluttering of its heavy double were kept in a rattling motion by the speed were going. Perceiving that the force of t been neutralized, I drew a heavy holster wheeling half round in my saddle, pointed ages. This caused them to fall back in som I took advantage of that fact to redouble m mile or so, gaining some six hundred yard suers, when I again drew rein to save my h

It required a long time for them to again r ing distance, but their yells and cries wer In this manner, alternately checking and horse, and presenting my pistol at the scoured over many miles of that infernal Jor eral arrows were sticking in my blanket; one my right arm, just bringing blood, and th touched my left thigh. I then became co my horse was the main object of their pu value and unequaled qualities were well kn Apaches, and they resolved to have him, if p course, my life would have been sacrificed, i only manage that little affair. I had bough of Capt. A. Buford, First United States Dra assured me that his equal did not exist in th He had been offered a hundred mustangs fo by a Mescalero Apache, but refused, on the he could take care of one animal with ease; possessed a hundred, the Apaches would b steal them at any moment while grazing.

Near the foot of the Jornada, the road t

named pro-
t I paid no
l one pene-
pletely de-
folds, which
at which we
e arrow had
pistol, and
t at the sav-
alarm, and
speed for a
on my pur-
se.
cover shoot-
perpetual.
eeding my
avages, we
ada. Sev-
had grazed
other had
inced that
suit. His
wn to the
ssible. Of
they could
the horse
oons, who
Territory.
the horse
round that
but if he
likely to

es a bold

---

sweeping curve to the left, toward Doña Ana, b
terrupted by a low but rugged series of small h
deep ravines. About eight o'clock P. M., the moo
bright and not a cloud visible, I dashed round t
hill, and was surprised to note that the Apaches
parently given up the chase, for I neither heard
any more of them, although I was about four h
yards ahead. Suddenly it flashed upon my mi
they might have some short cut-off, and had pu
with the intention of heading me. For the firs
struck my rowels into the reeking flanks of m
steed, and most gallantly did he respond to this l
He fairly flew over the road. Hill after hill wa
with wonderful rapidity until nearly a quarter of
had elapsed, when I again heard my Apache
about eighty yards in my rear. No sooner did th
ceive that their design had been penetrated an
trated, than they recommenced their yells with ad
vigor. But their horses were blown, as well a
They had come at their best pace the whole wa
mine had been saved from time to time. If I ha
fifty miles at a slow gait in the early day, they h
fifteen at dead speed before they reached to wh
race began.

In this manner we continued our career until I
within five miles of Doña Ana, about eleven o'clo
when, feeling myself comparatively safe, I com
emptying the cylinders of my heavy holster pistol
them. Their cries and yells were fearful at th
but I did not cease firing until they had fallen bac
reach. The remainder of my journey was made
company, and I reached Doña Ana about twelve
midnight, having made the distance of one hund
twenty-five miles, on one horse, in the space of

one hours, the last seventy miles bei
run.

So soon as I arrived, I threw off my
quite a number of arrows sticking in
José, and rubbed my horse down d
straw. This operation required about
washed him all over with strong whis
again rubbed him dry. This was foll
his shoes, and giving him about two qu
water as a draught. His whole bod
then swathed in blankets, a mess of
with water and mixed with a couple
steak, cut into small pieces, was given
deep bed of clean dry straw prepare
into. These duties kept me up until
when I refreshed my inner man with a
toddy, prepared by Buford, and sou
which I did not awaken for all that da
ing night. On the second day after th
I visited my horse and found him in as
any one could reasonably expect. He
dered nor injured in any ostensible m
a subsequent occasion he served me wi
capability, but never more under such
stances. Several efforts were afterwa
Apaches to get possession of that noble
proud and happy to add, invariably wit
the Copper Mines he was saved to me
On a certain occasion, remembering th
shoe, I sent José to bring him from the
ing about a mile distant, under the care
order was immediately obeyed, and in h
ward the whole herd was carried off by

It may be entered up as an invariab

ing performed at a

y serape, which had
it, called my boy,
lry with good, soft
t two hours. I then
sky and water, and
lowed by taking off
uarts of whisky and
ly and limbs were
cut hay, sprinkled
of pounds of raw
n him to eat, and a
ed for him to sink
l five o'clock A. M.,
wholesome whisky
ught repose, from
y and the succeed-
e above adventure,
s fine condition as
was neither foun-
nanner. On many
ith equal zeal and
exciting circum-
ards made by the
e beast, but, I am
thout success. At
by mere accident.
hat he had lost a
s herd then graz-
of a guard. The
half an hour after-
the Apaches.
ble rule, that the

---

visits of Apaches to American camps are alw
ister purposes. They have nothing to trade
quently, it is not barter that brings them.
but in no wise comparably with other Indian
scarcely expect to receive when they ask.
eyes omit nothing. One's arms and equi
number of your party, their cohesion and
their course of march, their system of defen
attack, and the amount of plunder to be ob
the least possible risk, are all noted and judg
ever their observations can be made from
heights with a chance of successful ambush,
never shows himself, nor gives any sign of h
Like the ground shark, one never knows he
til one feels his bite. In nature and disposit
its, laws, manners and customs, in religion
nies, in tribal and family organization, in la
signs, in war and in peace, he is totally differ
other Indians of the North American con
these facts will be set forth in future chapt
consideration of those who may peruse this

CHAPTER

Gold Mines.—Apache Raid.—Our Mules Stolen.
Apache Raid.—Fight with Delgadito's Ba
Delgadito Wounded.—His Death.—Trai
Sperian Views.—Apache Idea of Americ
Dias with Cuchillo Negro.—Abandon the
Cruz.—Bacuachi.—Arispe.—Ures.—He
Santa Rita.—The Pimos and Maricopas.—
Appearance.—Strange Relations Between
on Indian Character.—Our Indian Policy

The main object of the author
dents as will give his readers an in
acter; but in each case the relation
ring within his own personal expe
the habit to give details received f
from which the writer draws his
them to his readers as the results
tion and knowledge. This fault,
will be avoided in the present w
scribed which was not actually wit
by the author, who leaves his read
conclusions.

After the shooting of the Apach
by Jesus Lopez, matters resumed
for some weeks; but the calm was
The Apache mind had been deepl
covery of Inez and the two boys,
and long retention of their favorite
had been struck a few miles from
threatened the existence of a perma

VIII.

n.—Unsuccessful Scout.—Another
and.—Recovery of Stolen Cattle.—
aits of Apache Character.—Their
ican Wisdom.—Adventure of Mr.
e Copper Mines.—Sonora.—Santa
ermosillo.—Guaymas.—Return.—
—Their Tradition.—Their Personal
n the Two Tribes.—Lucubrations
Criticised.

r is to relate such inci-
nsight into Indian char-
on will be of facts occur-
erience. It is too much
from hearsay evidence,
conclusions and offers
of personal investiga-
t, for I so consider it,
work, and nothing de-
itnessed or experienced
aders to form their own

he at the Copper Mines
d a pacific appearance
s only on the surface.
ly exercised by the re-
s, and by our invasion
te haunt. Gold mines
the post, and this fact
anent colony of Amer-

icans, which also served to aggravat
and malevolence of the savages.
fear proved well grounded, for at th
three hundred Americans and others
and a considerable village has sprun
diate vicinity.

Mangas Colorado, Ponce, Delgad
Coletto Amarillo, and other promi
since then, all been sent to their lon
fles of Californian soldiers and Amer
without the loss of many innocent l
the perpetration of atrocities on the
which make the blood curdle at the
developments will form portions of

Toward the latter end of July, a
which Col. Craig was responsible,
although all the surrounding coun
thirty miles, was strictly searched.
and accomplished gentleman invite
and asked my opinion on the subje
tion, I informed him that I thoug
stolen them, either for the hope of
them back (as the Commissioner had
gifts on those of the tribe who bro
mals, or those supposed to have
had made the initiative of a war c
or three hours of conversation, the
idea, and determined to go and sear
Taking thirty soldiers, he visited
Delgadito, on the Mimbres river.
much excited, and disclaimed any
robbery, or any knowledge of the
promised to hunt them up and
officer, if found. Eight days after

promise, in a truly Apache
descent upon the Colonel's
him of the necessity to gu
animals, and some fine h
infantry, Col. Craig felt him
tive campaign against these
ages, and consequently invo
company of dragoons, from
arrival of that officer, anot
peared in the same mysterio
composed of the dragoons a
off to recover the lost anima
possible. This raid prove
animals being recovered, no
ing the absence of the for
that the Apaches had attack
three or four miles down the
the cattle. About twenty of
Lieut. A. W. Whipple, mou
immediate pursuit. The In
thick forest, and one party,
riors, stood to give us battle,
on with the cattle. The In
behind large pine trees, and
but still showing front. O
being joined by Mr. Hay, th
his associates, we left our h
and took to the trees, keepin
hind their friendly shelter.

Here, for the first time, all
the robbers was set at rest, f
gadito, who kept at a safe d
rents of the vilest abuse upon
scoundrel had slept in my te

manner, by making another
herd of mules, and relieving
rd twenty-five more of those
orses. Having nothing but
self unable to maintain an ac-
bold and well-mounted sav-
ked the aid of Capt. Buford's
Doña Ana. Soon after the
her batch of animals disap-
us manner, and a joint scout,
nd mounted infantry, started
ls, or punish the robbers, if
l wholly ineffective, neither
r Indians punished; but dur-
e, intelligence was brought
ed the mining camp, about
cañon, and were driving off
the Commission, headed by
nted their horses and gave
dians were overhauled in a
numbering about fifty war-
, while a detachment hurried
dians concealed themselves
retreated as fast as possible,
ur party dismounted, and,
e head miner, with four of
rses in care of eight men,
g up a lively fire from be-

doubt as to the identity of
r they were headed by Del-
istance and poured out tor-
the Americans. This same
nt only two nights before,

when I gave him a good shirt a
shoes.

The Government had furnishe
several styles of newly-patented s
were some Wesson's rifles, which
with fair accuracy a distance of f
that period a very remarkable d
rifles I had ordered to be fitted wi
and at three hundred and fifty y
could hit the size of his hat eight

Among our party was Wells, t
riage driver—an excellent, brave
crack shot. I pointed Delgadito
ing him my rifle, told him to appr
sible, take good aim and bring th
glided from tree to tree with th
rapidity, until he got within two
seventy yards of Delgadito, who
slapping his buttocks and defying
probrious language. While in th
posteriors—a favorite taunt amon
covered them to Wells, who too
fired. This mark of attention wa
with an unearthly yell and a serie
that would put a *maitre de ball*
Apache leader was recalled to ful
exposed position by the whizzing
in close proximity to his upper e
saltatory exercises and rushed fra
copse, followed by his band. W
horses and having remounted, ag
pursuit. In fifteen minutes we
and opened upon the plain, over w
scouring for life. The pursuit l

and just at sundown we came once more upon the cattle, when the party in charge abandoned them and sought safety in flight with their beaten companions. Perceiving that further pursuit would be useless, we contented ourselves by bringing back Mr. Hay's herd. I afterward learned that the ball from Wells' rifle gouged a neat streak across that portion of Delgadito's person denominated in school parlance as the "seat of honor." His riding and general activity were spoiled for several weeks.

This celebrated Apache was subsequently killed by a Mexican, whom he was endeavoring to dupe and destroy. They were fording the Mimbres river on foot, and upon reaching the eastern bank, Delgadito caught hold of the projecting branch of a tree to assist himself, when the Mexican took advantage of his momentary neglect, and plunged his knife through the Indian's heart from behind. It is an actual fact that the dead savage was found, the next day, still clinging to the branch. This event took place two years after we had left the country. I never met with Delgadito after the affair in the woods; but had resolved to pistol him the very first time we got close enough to make my shot sure.

In every case the Copper Mine Apaches had been treated with the greatest kindness and hospitality by the whole Commission. They had received very many and valuable presents. For months they had the unrestricted freedom of our camp. All causes of dispute had been settled to their own satisfaction; nothing had occurred for weeks to disturb the existing harmony. Only two days before the affair above described, Delgadito and over a hundred warriors had been in the Copper Mines, and emphatically disavowed any participation in or knowledge of the wholesale robberies which had been committed on our people. Mr. Bartlett and Dr. Webb had persisted in their theory, that "kind treatment, a rigid adherance to what is right, and a prompt and invariable fulfillment of all promises, would secure the friendship of the Apaches;" but, although this kind of treatment had been exactly carried out by Mr. Bartlett and his Commission, the Apaches took occasion to manifest their appreciation and friendship by robbing over three hundred head of our finest mules and horses, which had been resting and growing fat and strong for future use. They never served us again. There are cases where an individual Apache will conceive a personal regard for a particular man, and will do him almost any act of kindness in his power, but this is far, very far, from being a general rule. From earliest infancy they are instructed to regard every other race as natural enemies. Their suspicions and savage distrust are aroused and cultivated before they ever come in contact with other people. An Apache child of three years will run and yell with fear and hate from a white man. Apache mothers hush their children by naming an American. To rob or kill a Mexican, is considered a most honorable achievement; but to commit successful outrage upon an American, entitles the perpetrator to the highest consideration. Dexterity in stealing is a virtue of no mean character. The most adroit thief is precisely the man who is best capable of maintaining his wives in plenty and bedecking them in meretricious finery, of which they are inordinately fond. The Apache woman who is saddled with the least work and the most ornaments, is the envied of her sex. For this reason, the young girls prefer to become the fifth, sixth, or seventh wife of a noted robber, rather than the single spouse of a less adroit thief. In the first case her labors are divided by her associate wives, and are, therefore, measurably lessened, while her chances for obtaining gew-gaws are quite as good or better. They u questionably prefer polygamy, as it exists.

A really brave man does not rank as high as a rea clever, thievish poltroon. His gallantry is admired, a in times of danger all flock around him for protectio but at other periods the young squaws give him the c shoulder, and he is regarded as little better than a f who will run into danger, but does not know how to ste or enrich himself at the expense of others. "He i very brave warrior," say they, "a man who will fight a shed his blood in our defense; but he is little better th an ass, because he is always poor and don't know how steal and not be caught." I am not too sure that som thing of this characteristic does not obtain among peo who profess to rank much higher than the Apaches the scale of mankind. It might be as well, perhaps, pull the mote out of our own eyes before we attempt extract the beam from those of our savage brethr Nevertheless, the Apache character is not lovely. point of natural shrewdness, quick perception and k animal instinct they are unequaled by any other peop They know what is just and proper, because in all th talks they urge justice and propriety, and profess to guided by those virtues; but all their acts belie th words. Deceit is regarded among them with the sa admiration we bestow upon one of the fine arts. To the suspicions of an enemy—and to them all other peo are enemies—and then take advantage of his creden is regarded as a splendid stroke of policy. To rob not be robbed; to kill and not be killed; to take cap and not be captured, form the sum of an Apache's edu tion and ambition, and he who can perform these with the greatest success is the greatest man in the tr To be a prominent Apache is to be a prominent scound

But the reader will have plenty of opportunities to judge for himself, as the succeeding pages will unfold incidents enough from which to form a criterion. They are far from cowardly, but they are exceedingly prudent. Twenty Apaches will not attack four well armed and determined men, if they keep constantly on their guard and prepared for action. In no case will they incur the risk of losing life, unless the plunder be most enticing and their numbers overpowering, and even then they will track a small party for days, waiting an opportunity to establish a secure ambush or effect a surprise. A celebrated warrior once told me: "You Americans are fools, for whenever you hear a gun fire you run straight to the spot; but we Apaches get away, and by and by steal round and discover the cause."

I have before stated that individual Apaches will sometimes conceive a regard for particular persons not of their tribe, and an incident illustrative of this fact occurred to Lieut. Diaz of the Mexican Commission. Mr. Diaz had been ordered to occupy a station on the top of a certain prominent height, and took with him a party of ten men. His camp was only about four miles from the camp of Gen. Garcia Conde; but getting out of provisions he left the mountain, accompanied by one man, for the purpose of ordering another supply. His course led him over a perfectly smooth plain for the distance of two miles. Not a tree, nor a bush, nor a rock was visible, but the grass was thick and about a foot high. Mr. Diaz and his man walked side by side, each with a six-shooter in his hand, for the Apaches were then hostile. About the middle of the plain Mr. Diaz felt his right wrist seized and his left arm pinioned, while his pistol was taken from his grasp, and he found himself in the power of Cuchillo Negro and a dozen other savages. His at-

tendant was also seized and a prisoner. Cuchi
looked at him for a moment, with a most gr
pression on his savage face, and then said:

"My friend, you see that you cannot escape
I like you and will do you no harm. You n
from staying on that hill. I want it; it belon
You have intruded into my country; but you
like. I will keep these pistols; but send for t
your men on the hill and take them away. For
we will not kill them this time."

Poor Lieut. Diaz had not a word to reply
promise that the Indian's request would be gra
turn for his generosity. It seems that Cuchi
had observed the movement of Mr. Diaz, and
band had buried himself under the grass, w
auspicious moment when Mr. Diaz should pa
the road, when suddenly and noiselessly risin
ages grasped the unsuspecting Mexicans. I
add, that Mr. Diaz was the officer charged to
the fortress of Chapultepec, should it fall into
of the Americans; but when the time came his h
him, and he was captured pistol in hand, as i
fire the magazine.

A few weeks after the incidents above desc
Commission abandoned the Copper Mines, i
prosecute their labors to completion, and thi
ment was always regarded by the Apaches as
mate result of their active hostility. This fa
my knowledge twelve years subsequent to th
our removal, at which time it was again my p
renew my acquaintance with Mangas Colorad
only one living of the chiefs we had met at t
Mines. Coletto Amarillo, Ponce and his son,
in action by Californian soldiers, and it was
Mangas to die on the point of an American b

After a long travel through Sonora, visiting S
Cruz, Bacuachi, Babispe, Tumacarcori, Imurez, Ari
Ures, Hermosillo, Guaymas, and several other to
Mr. Bartlett took passage by sea from Guaymas, lea
Dr. Webb, Mr. Thurber, Mr. Pratt and his son, my
and five others, making a party of ten, to reach Cali
nia overland, and join him at San Diego. This w
very small party to travel through the Apache stro
holds, especially at a time when those savages wer
open war with us; but we were all splendidly armed,
cept Dr. Webb, who could never be persuaded to c
anything but a small five-inch five-shooter and a kni
and we were also tolerably experienced in the Apa
style of warfare, and the nature of the country to
traversed. The magnificent Santa Rita, ten thous
feet high, with its majestic head wreathed in snow,
bac, San Xavier del Bac and Tucson were successiv
reached and passed. The great desert of ninety mi
without water—I speak of eighteen years ago, in 185
between Tucson and the Gila river, was crossed saf
but not without much suffering; and we finally reac
the Pimo villages, where we met Lieut. Whipple a
party.

The Pimos have ever been most friendly to America
and I have yet to learn of a single instance in which th
ever harmed a white man. These Indians are not noma
Their villages have remained in the same localities
hundreds of years. As their country affords no gam
and they are by no means a warlike tribe, they mainta
themselves in comfort and abundance by tilling t
ground, and limit their warlike propensities to punishi
the raids made upon them by other tribes. These Pim
profess to have originally come from the far south. A
cording to their tradition, their forefathers were driv

from their native land many centuries ago
an asylum by coming northward. They pr
crossed through Sonora, and finally settled
about twenty miles east of the eastern limit
Gila Bend, where that river makes a detour
of nearly ninety miles, and, after sweepin
base of a range of mountains, resumes its or
westward. Here they were visited by the
sionaries, who taught them how to till the
supplied them with many valuable seeds,
structed them in the art of preparing and
ton. A Pimo cotton blanket will last for
really a very handsome and creditable affai
never cut their hair, but wear it in massiv
folds, which frequently descend to the cal
legs. The front hair is cut even with the eye
women wear short hair, and are not permitt
more than eight or nine inches in length.
robust and well-formed race, and not at all
but exceedingly superstitious — far more
other tribe I ever met. They are hospitable
exceedingly proud of the purity of their blo

Living in the closest amity with them are t
Indians, who, like the Pimos, claim to be dir
ants from Moctezuma, but differ from them e
their language, laws, habits, manners and r
emonies. The Maricopa tradition, as given
José, a chief of some importance in forme
subsequently confirmed by Juan Chivari,
head chief of the tribe, is to the following e

About a hundred years ago the Yumas, C
Maricopas composed one tribe, known as th
icopa tribe. They occupied the country ab
of the Gulf of California, and for some dist

o, and sought
rofess to have
l on the Gila,
t of the Great
r to the north
ng round the
riginal course
e Jesuit mis-
ground, and
, and also in-
l weaving cot-
years, and is
ir. The men
ve plaits and
alves of their
ebrows. The
ted to have it
They are a
l revengeful,
so than any
e, chatty, and
ood.
the Maricopa
rect descend-
essentially in
religious cer-
n me by Juan
er times, and
the present
effect.
Cocopahs and
he Coco-Mar-
bout the head
tance up the

Colorado river. At that time a dispute occurr
what is now known as the Cocopah tribe split
the secessionists were permitted to go in peac
pacific policy soon afterward induced the par
known as Maricopas, to secede also; but this d
incurred the severe displeasure and hostility of
mainder, who now form the Yuma tribe. Ma
guinary conflicts ensued, when the Yumas succe
obtaining the aid of the Cocopahs, and, togeth
gradually forced the Maricopas up the Colorad
the Gila was reached. Knowing that the countr
north was occupied by the Amojaves, a large and
tribe, the retreating Maricopas turned their ste
ward, and followed the windings of the Gila riv
sued by their relentless enemies, until they reac
Great Gila Bend. Their spies were sent across t
ert and returned with the intelligence that they
a tribe living in well constructed and comfortable
cultivating the land, well clothed, numerous, an
rently happy. A council was called and it was a
send an embassy to the Pimos, to negotiate a d
and offensive alliance, and with the request t
Pimos would parcel out to them a suitable am
land for their occupation. After much delay, a
true Indian circumspection, it was agreed that th
copas should inhabit certain lands of the Pimos
was made a *sine qua non* that the new-comers m
ever renounce their warlike and hunting prope
and dedicate themselves to tillage—for, said the
we have no hunting grounds; we do not wish t
the vengeance of the Tontos, the Chimehuev
Apaches, and others, by making useless raids
them; they have nothing to lose, and we have, a
must confine yourselves solely to revenging any

incursions made either upon us
You are free to worship after you
govern yourselves according to you
must be ready at all times to fur
number of warriors to protect the
the event of taking any booty, ther
sion made by a council of sagamore
numbers from each tribe, and the
final.

These equitable and generous ter
the Maricopas, who immediately o
Pimo territory, and imitated them i
their dwellings and the cultivation
supplied with seed by the Pimos.
two tribes have continued togeth
years; yet, as an instance of the pe
an Indian will cling to his own part
toms, although many of them hav
their villages are never more tha
and in some cases not more than fou
this day they cannot converse wit
through an interpreter. Their law
ceremonies and language, remain q
the day they sought the Pimo alli
no difference of color or diversity o
no clashing element, no cause for dis
or contention. They are and have
friends for the period stated, have
ried, are bound together by one com
one common cause, have the same
against and the same evils to deplore-
to enjoy; yet they are no closer tog
were one hundred years ago. Ought
ble facts to furnish us a lesson in

r upon yourselves.
r own manner, and
own laws; but you
ish a proportionate
eneral weal, and, in
shall be a fair divi-
, composed of equal
r decision must be

s were accepted by
cupied a portion of
the construction of
of the land, being
In this manner the
for one hundred
inacity with which
ular tribe and cus-
intermarried, and
two miles apart,
hundred yards, to
each other unless
religion, manners,
te as distinct as on
nce. Here we find
pursuit. There is
ordant controversy,
een the warmest of
equently intermar-
non sympathy and
nemies to contend
-the same blessings
her now than they
ot these indisputa-
Indian character?

Must we forever blind our eyes to such teach
rience and fact, and indulge in the pleasin
that we can effect radical changes in their
social economy? Enthusiasts will point to
ual exceptions, who have, as it were, got ri
dian nature and elevated themselves to a h
in the mental, social and political scales;
ceptions are very few, and only serve to
rule that the leopard cannot change his
Ethiopian his skin. The Cherokees, C
Chickasaws, are pointed out as triumphal
what the white man's instructions and pre
for the Indian races. But in what essentia
have they demonstrated this wonderful impr
is true that many of them know how to re
compute; that they assume, to some extent, t
of the whites; that they have learned how t
better class of houses, and have improved t
condition in other respects; but is this true
ity? Have they not adopted, to the fulle
the vices of the whites, while acquiring s
minor virtues? If left to themselves, woul
tinue to advance and progress in wisdom a
would they retrograde into barbarism? A
changes and improvements as have taken
them more attributable to the large admixtu
blood visible in these tribes, than to any
How many of pure Indian blood are now
among them? Are not those people rapidl
away, and will they not soon be among the
were? Have their numbers increased, or h
come strong? Do they love us with any deep
or do they show gratitude for their civilizati

But, says the christian philanthropist, it is

continue even unto the end; to
become lukewarm. These peo
well as yourself. They are po
and if your lot has been cast, th
idence, in a more elevated and
you should not contemn thos
these benefits. The Almighty
express purpose of exercising
brotherly love, and all your be
Take the red man by the hand
negro brother, and guide him
better state in this world and th
after.

I admit that these are very
arguments; but, reverend sir, th
fuses to come. He disdains to
my offered sympathy, and fee
sumption in proffering him my
tion. He conceives himself n
cidedly my superior. He desi
His forefathers lived well enou
services, and he intends to do
of the woods, the plains, the m
us as the men of the towns and
sible consideration would he ch
domiciliary style of life, and wi
all our efforts are vain and idle.
fied dignity he listens to all y
cealed dislike he makes it a poi
he has heard, or, if rememberi
something to be avoided. You
as baits and traps, and your de
an effort to bring him under you
must ever remain, to him, an

t not by the way, nor
re God's children, as
d of immortal souls,
h the mercy of Prov-
ul condition of life,
o have been denied
reated them for the
: philanthropy, your
nd nobler qualities.
ou have done to his
tly, kindly toward a
pe of salvation here-

uasive and forcible
l man absolutely re-
my hand; he flouts
dignant at my pre-
o improve his condi-
ly my equal, but de-
nly to be let alone.
without our officious
ise. He is the man
ins, and looks upon
cities. For no pos-
places or accept our
such domestication
ith calm and unruf-
y, and with uncon-
remember nothing
o treasure it up as
nsels are considered
domiciliate him as
ntrol. You are and
t of suspicion and

---

distrust. You are understood to b
and all his faculties are awakened ag
Treasuring up his own vengeful pur
years, he imputes to you the same,
of doing him ultimate harm. No e
your part, can induce him to disabu
idea, because he is not capable of su
regards it as the finest stroke of du
treachery, he is ever on his guard
Even members of his own tribe are n

When you talk to him of a Creat
admits that fact; and when you end
attributes of the Most High, he tells
to propitiate the devil. Any attemp
prehend the Trinity is laughed to sc
not to tell you that you lie, simply
his comprehension. He admires a
to read, write and calculate, and wo
those accomplishments; but ask him
to school, in order that they might
and straightway he regards you as
trol and bewitch the beloved offsprin
obtain information by oral means, b
learning it by studious process, wh
species of slavery, and detests the
the teacher over his free born, w
children. While he frankly admits
clothed, better fed, and better condit
than he is, he as frankly and per
overtures and invitations to adopt yo
is as dogmatically convinced of his s
of yours, and no effort of rhetoric or
him to a different opinion. Show h
magnetism, or a microscope, or expla
anism of a watch, or direct his adr

a telescope, and he will express unfeigned delight,
will, at the same time, regard you with additional d
trust and suspicion. In fine, all your efforts are treat
as the advances of an invidious enemy, and no expen
ture of time or industry has ever been successful in t
field of operation. How can we cultivate and impro
human beings who resolutely refuse cultivation and i
provement, and brand all our efforts as so many snar
laid for their subjection? But it is useless to prolong
discussion of this subject; *experientia docet*, and expe
ence has shown the futility of all attempts to cultivat
civilize and christianize the North American savage.

The deplorable condition of the Californian Indian
after years upon years of Jesuit teachings, and the fou
dation of numerous missions, surrounded with large an
pacific Indian populations, only offers another proof th
the savage tribes of this continent are not susceptible
permanent and radical improvement. Instead of bein
bettered, civilized and christianized, they have contracte
all the worst features of the white race and retained a
the more despicable characteristics of their own, whil
the native dignity, courage and primitive virtues of th
Indian have been completely annihilated. In all th
world there is no more despicable people than the indig
enous tribes of California, which have been, for year
under the sway and tuition of the Jesuit fathers, wh
piously thought they were doing God good service. I
all the attributes of manhood, in everything which digni
fies uncivilized human nature, the untamed tribes ar
infinitely their superiors. Superstition, cowardice, filth
sloth, drunkenness, moral depravity, and the most re
volting licentiousness have replaced the sterner and mor
simple qualities of the wild Indian tribes. In the desir
to do them good, we have done them the most harm
In the hope of excising their savage defects, we have in

oculated them with the most terrific vices. This is a sad picture, but it cannot be denied.

What was the result of bringing leading chiefs, like Black Hawk, Keokuk, Irritaba and Juan Chivari from their native wilds to behold and take lessons from the wealth, power, numbers and general superiority of our people? In each case those once renowned warriors lost their whole influence. They were regarded with suspicion and dislike by their own tribes. They were suspected of being bewitched. Their tales of the wondrous things they saw and heard were treated with scorn and unbelief, and, in some instances, such as in that of Irritaba and Juan Chivari, they barely escaped death at the hands of their former followers.

The North American savage gazes with ill-suppressed admiration upon our palatial buildings, our thronged streets, our splendid stores, our vast and complicated mechanical engineering, our big guns and great ships; but his teaching ends there. While wondering at these things, he pants for his own unbounded plains and dense forests. He is not animated to attempt any change in his own method of life. He has no idea of toiling throughout existence that his children's children, to the tenth or twentieth generation, may possess capabilities and advantages like those enjoyed by the white man. His ambition is not at all excited, and he philosophically concludes that each race has its appointed duties, and is engaged in its fulfillment. Indians who have been removed from their native scenes at an early age, and received the best education attainable in our seminaries of learning, have almost invariably returned to their wastes, and proved the most formidable enemies of those who congratulated themselves on having rescued them as "brands from the burning."

CHAPTER IX.

Pimo Superstition.—Eclipse of the Moon.—Terrible Excitement.—
Predicament.—Lieut. Whipple's Coolness.—Satisfactory Re
and Maricopas.—Their Traditions.—Religious and Modes of
Dr. David Wooster.—Arrival of Gen. Condo.—Death of Antoni
and Revolting Ceremonies.—The Gila Bend.—Down the Gila.
copa Refugees.—Important News.—The Colorado River.—Jo
and his Party.

◆

AMONG the most superstitious of all our Indi
the Pimos take precedence. They entertain an
ing belief in witchcraft, sorcery, ghosts, the dir
ence of the evil one, and the absolute necessity
pitiating the "gentleman in black." It is not
means, difficult to disturb their serenity and set
most wild, by the exercise of the most simple
known to us. I have often fancied to myself
bounded wonderment and fear at a skillful exhi
the magic lantern, or the more scientific feats of
try—such as converting fluids into solids, and
—but so far none of these effects have been show

After joining the party under Lieut. Whipp
superior officer and thorough gentleman, invite
accompany him one beautiful night to assist in o
an eclipse of the moon, which was to take pla
ten o'clock. The opportunity to make observat
too valuable to be lost, and as Mr. Wheaton wa
invitation to fill his place was kindly tendere
writer. The large telescope and other importan
ments were carried by two men of Whipple's pa

we proceeded until the highest hillock in the neighborhood was surmounted. The Pimos and Maricopas soo learned that the white men were abroad with sundr curious looking weapons, and surrounded us by hundreds but as we knew them to be thoroughly peaceful, an even generous, no notice was taken of their presence The telescope was placed in position, and on being aske by a Pimo what it was, I carelessly replied that it was terrific cannon, the shot of which would reach to th moon. Little did we think how quickly this answe would place us in imminent jeopardy. The round, ful moon was sailing across the heavens in refulgent splendor. Not a cloud could be seen; the air was calm and tranquil; the night was pleasantly warm, and everythin promised a satisfactory observation. By and by, th eclipse was about to commence. Mr. Whipple statione himself at the telescope, and the rest of us stood ready to obey his directions. Every one was attentive, and wholly bent on making the occasion a success. A length the observation commenced. It was watched by the Indians, who kept their eyes alternately fixed on th moon and on Mr. Whipple; and as the disc of that luminary began to grow less and less, and darker and darker, the Chief, Culo Azul, said to me: "What ar you doing?"

Not apprehending any difficulty, and relying on thei well known and often tried amity, I replied: "We ar shooting and killing the moon."

This was translated to the surrounding multitude, and immediately followed by the most dreadful yells I eve heard. A rush was made toward us, and weapons brandished with fearful and vengeful violence. Ou party became alarmed, and prepared to sell our lives as dearly as possible; but the thought of our unsuspecting

comrades in the camp compelled us to
The first object of the savages was evid
the weapon which they believed to be k
but its loss would have been irreparable
geance would not have stopped there.

"What are we to do without the moon
Chief. "How are we to note time? Ho
when to plant and when to reap? How
our nights in darkness, and be incapac
venting Apache raids? What have we d
you should do this thing to us?"

To these questions, asked with vehem
ity, I replied, "Wait until I consult my
immediately acquainted Mr. Whipple wi
That officer had left the telescope in ala
diately replaced himself with the gre
and, in an undertone, said:

"Tell them that, if they will keep qu
not to make any hostile movement, we
moon again, as full and as bright as ever

His coolness, courage, and undisturbed
excited my highest admiration, and I im
lated his words to Culo Azul, who ag
known to his people. Under the directio
ple, I added:

"We can hit the moon, as you may see
—at this time that luminary was obscur
the earth's shadow—"and it is also in o
store it to health and strength; but if you
jure our instruments, then the moon mus
and can never be restored. We have onl
feelings toward the Pimos and Maricopa
wished to destroy the moon in order to p
from guiding the Apaches and Yumas t

But as our brethren have signified their dislike to the proceeding, we will restore the moon to its original splendor. If in a little while it does not reappear, our Pimo and Maricopa friends may take their vengeance and destroy our instruments. But they must remember that we alone are the medicine men; our brethren in the camp are as innocent as you, and should not be disturbed or held accountable in any event."

This promise restored some degree of tranquility, and they gave us their word not to injure or interfere with our unsuspecting comrades.

It has often occurred to me what a dreadful fate would have been ours if a sudden storm had arisen at that period, and prevented the moon from being seen again immediately after the eclipse. But the heavens were specially bright and cloudless, and not the slightest incident occurred to dash our courage. In the course of time the observation reached its fullest extent, and the anxiety of our Indian friends became intense. Yells and moanings rent the still night air, maledictions and curses were lavished upon us, weapons were drawn, and every indication given of speedy dismissal from this vale of tears; but the grand old chief, who seemed to have absolute control of his people, stood between us and harm, and quietly awaited the issue. By and by the moon began to exhibit her brilliant shield once more. Its silver disc grew larger and larger. Gradually, but surely, it sailed from behind the earth's shadow and assumed its pristine proportions, until she was again unveiled in full majesty. To describe the joy, the amazement and the homage of the savages is quite impossible. We were lifted up on their arms, patted on our backs, embraced, and dignified to their utmost extent. All this time Mr. Whipple had been quietly taking his observations and writing them in

his book. At no period did he app
cerned. His equanimity won respect
with the Pimos became all powerful.
chapter will be found detailed anoth
ous incident among those Indians.

The Pimos and Maricopas both pr
descent from Moctezuma, whoever th
man may be, but they have entirely d
the matter. The Pimos believe Moct
a god, who resided on earth for a tim
founder of their race, but was treach
murdered. Before yielding up the g
his slayers with future punishment, f
ing of the various tribes he had crea
and promised to come again and assu
affairs when all his children should be
rule.

The Pimos invariably resort to the
tion when any of their tribe dies. T
upon a funeral pyre and rapidly cons
made to collect the ashes of the dead,
and relatives take a portion, and, mi
dissolved gum of the mesquit tree (w
the acacia, and yields a concrete ju
arabic), they daub their faces with the
and permit it to remain until it is wor

The chastity of their women is pro
probably more the result of the fea
from any natural virtue. Among the
men are tolerated, but the Pimo girl
in carnal intercourse with any other
runs nine chances out of ten to be sto
white man be a trader among them,
for a long time, and has acquired

ppear ruffled or con-
ct, and his influence
al. In a subsequent
her and no less curi-

pretend to trace their
hat renowned gentle-
different ideas about
ctezuma to have been
ime, and became the
cherously and basely
ghost, he threatened
foretold the scatter-
ested and organized,
sume control of their
be reunited under his

e ceremony of crema-
The body is placed
nsumed. No effort is
d, but all his friends
nixing them with the
(which is a species of
juice similar to gum
he odious compound,
orn away.
roverbial, but this is
ear of detection than
hemselves loose wo-
who may be caught
r than a Pimo man,
toned to death. If a
, and has been there
something of their

---

language, he is more or less considered entitl
privileges of the tribe; but, even then, disclosu
cubinage is attended with imminent danger to t
female. The women of this tribe are particu
looking, possessing elegant forms, nicely shaped
tapered limbs, brilliant and perfect white tee
hands, and the easy carriage of the unfettere
girl who never saw a pair of corsets, nor inc
form in the net-work of crinoline. The men ar
and tolerably well made, but in nowise remar
size nor physical strength. Their powers of e
are about on a par with most other Indian races
no comparison with those of the Apaches. Th
most all bow-legged, with long trunks and ar
chested, narrow shouldered and big headed. T
are flatter, wider and more fleshy than those
tribes, while their feet, in both sexes, are unusu
and splayed. Prior to receiving muskets an
nition from the American Government—a favor
them through the wise intercession of Gen. J
Carleton—their weapons consisted of a bow an
and a lance or knife. Their arrows differ from
all the Apache tribes in having only two feather
of three, and in being much longer, with the e
ception of the Coyoteros, who use very long s
reed, finished out with some hard wood, and a
flint head, but invariably with three feathers a
posite end.

The Maricopas invariably bury their dead, a
the ceremony of cremation. They, like the Pi
most other Indian tribes, believe in the existenc
gods, who divide the universe between them.
the divinities is the author of all good, the
father of all evil. The good god is deemed a

inactive spirit, who takes no d
of mankind, but relies more u
the evils brought upon them by
any direct efforts of his own.
the knowledge that after mank
tormented by his great adversa
a source of refuge. On the ot
evil spirit with powers of uneq
activity. He is everywhere at
in all schemes and pursuits, wi
them to his ultimate use. The
exposed as he is to the influenc
to propitiate the most active of t
will control his every day avoca
to approach the good spirit and
made terms with his one great
something in the style of Louis
in use among these Indians. T
for chastity, but are very cautiou
is severely punished, although
tains among the Pimos. They
as their neighbors, and the me
with a superior reputation as wa
accoutrements, and general styl
similar as not to arrest the att
their religion, language, laws
different. The Maricopas seem
recklessness and cordiality of m
who are constrained and stiff i
strangers. The Pimo believes i
material modifications will exist;
that the existence of man, after
his earthly career—that his want
be very similar to those he exp

ecisive part in the affairs
pon their desire to escape
the bad spirit than upon
He contents himself with
kind has been sufficiently
ry, they will seek him as
her hand, they invest the
qualed and inconceivable
once, and takes the lead
th the view of converting
first duty of the Indian,
es of these two spirits, is
he two, and the one which
tions. His next object is
ask his pardon for having
enemy. This method is
XI's prayers, but is really
heir women are not noted
s against detection, which
not to the extent that ob-
are quite as good looking
n generally are credited
rriors. Their dress, arms,
le of person are so nearly
ention of travelers; but
and customs are wholly
n to have more general
manner than the Pimos,
n their intercourse with
n a future state, in which
; but the Maricopa thinks
death, closely resembles
ts and requirements will
perienced in this world.

Acting on this belief he will sacrifice at th
warrior all the property of which he died p
gether with all in possession of his various r
decease of a warrior therefore becomes a b
for mourning; for each of his immediate
stripped of any goods they may own, in o
spirit may assume a proper place and distin
his predecessors in the other world. This
course impoverishes all his relations, and
creates sincere grief. How completely is t
variance with ours. How clearly does it exhi
ence between savage and enlightened views
no common importance. This custom, so str
among the Maricopas, does not exist amon
but in the case of an intermarriage between t
the deceased is invariably sepultured in rig
with the views of his or her tribe. Se
after all, as strong a motive among India
whites, and for this reason intermarriages
two tribes are so rare, even after one hun
undivided co-existence on the same lands,
tion of the same general objects.

A more marked dissimilarity is observabl
perstitions regarding warfare. The Americ
take a body of Pimos and follow up the tra
force until he has run his game to earth,
takes place, in which he can depend upon t
courage of his followers; but should the
in the death of a single enemy, or in that o
must bid adieu to any further effort for th
for the Pimos will immediately about face a
their villages, to undergo the process of pur
blood. No threats, no inducements can ma
or modify this course. It is a part of their

they will observe its dict
dred of the enemy may b
but if blood be spilled
villages for the purpose
Maricopas, although they
path after the enemy has
led by energetic white m
them to the end. The
marked some singularly
these two tribes; and thi
ordinary in view of the fa
together for so many ye
common bond of sympath
another convincing proof
the unchangeable and u
North American savage.

The country inhabited
a dead flat with clayey so
when wet, and sparsely c
is a fine wheat land, and t
crops of wheat, melons,
supplies are almost wholl
before recited, they man
of cotton blanket, which
fortable and lasting. Dr
cisco, who resided among
piled a vocabulary of the
informed with regard to t
man. He was indefatig
ceived the confidence and
his many benevolent act
tion to their sick, without
reward. The remembran
cherished among them, a
visit, to make known tha

s. One, or twenty, or a hun-
illed during the engagement,
e Pimos will return to their
ove stated. Not so with the
re prone to abandon the war
een met and overcome; but if
they will continue and obey
nder cannot fail to have re-
liverse traits of character in
difference is the more extra-
that they have been domiciled
, and been acting under one
and interest. It only affords
f any such were required, of
mpressible character of the

y the Pimos and Maricopas is
, which is extremely tenacious
ered with mesquit trees. It
Indians raise very abundant
mpkins and corn; but their
limited to these articles. As
acture a very superior quality
l turn rain, and is warm, com-
David Wooster of San Fran-
hem for some time, and com-
language, is, perhaps, better
se tribes than any other white
le in his researches, and re-
affection of these Indians for
and his self-sacrificing atten-
he hope or prospect of pay or
e of his many kind deeds is
they charged me, on my last
act to their benefactor.

We left the Pimo villages with muc
had learned that the Yumas, on the C
declared war with the Americans, an
time was only ten strong, seven Am
Mexicans, among whom was the step-f
had consented to act as guide and arr
Just as we were about to depart an inc
planatory of Indian character, and for
of a place in this work.

Gen. Garcia Conde had been to t
with his command, and returned to t
bringing with him a noted Yuma chie
This brave had signalized himself in
tests between the Yumas and Maricop
the undying vengeance of the latter tr
however, persuaded him to act as gu
promising to protect him from all har
safely returned to his country and pe
at the Maricopa village, which was th
ward, it was soon bruited abroad that
the Mexicans and under their protect
Maricopas and Pimos visited Gen. Co
a sight of their famed enemy, but no
tions were made, as Gen. Conde wa
would protect Antonio at all hazards,
disposition to provoke his power to e
The next morning Antonio was foun
pierced in many places. Gen. Conde
but as the deed had already been
there was no clue whatever of the
tented himself with giving decent ch
the remains, and then immediately p
ney.

Two days afterward we passed dow

westward, and it was my lot to be something like a mile or two in the rear of my comrades, but being better mounted than they, this fact gave me no concern, especially as I knew that we were among peaceful and inoffensive tribes. Just south of the last village inhabited by the Maricopas, a low, flat-topped hill is met, with its northern base close to the highway along which I had to pass. On arriving near this hill, I observed a very large crowd of Indians on its summit and sides, who appeared to be performing a series of most unusual antics, accompanied with occasional discordant and ear-splitting yells. At first I feared that my comrades had committed some act that had aroused their vengeance, but cooler consideration convinced me that they were not the men to do foolish acts. I rode forward at a round gallop, with the intention of passing the hill and its occupants as quickly as possible without appearing to be in flight, but I was not destined to escape so easily. Four or five stalwart warriors placed themselves in the road and beckoned me to hold up, and, believing discretion to be the better part of valor, on this occasion at least, I obeyed their summons. One took my horse, while another assisted me, most courteously, to dismount, and then taking my hand, led me up the ascent, accompanied by his associates. It beggars all my descriptive powers to depict the scene which met my astonished gaze when I reached the summit and was introduced inside the inner ring. From four to five thousand Indians were present. The squaws were formed in three complete circles nearest the center, leaving a space of two hundred yards diameter. Around these were great numbers of warriors, of greater or less fame, and boys from ten to fifteen years of age. In the center of the open space a human head, and the forearms with hands attached, were placed upon the ground—the head standing on the stump of the neck, which was supported by a stick driven into the ground and thrust up through the throat, and the arms and hands crossed, one over the other, immediately in front of the face. I recognized the head to be that of Antonio, the murdered Yuma chief, and concluded that the present gathering was held for the purpose of a grand jubilee over his death. My conjecture was correct, but before I had time to reflect, I was seized by the hands of two powerful Indians, who joined others, until a small ring of sixty or seventy were got together, and was hurried round and round, in a regular dance, about the horrid spectacle for the space of several minutes. Showing signs of fatigue from the violent rotary motion, I was rescued by a friendly Pimo, who said: "Do you like this thing?"

"Certainly," I replied, "it is your way of rejoicing over the death of your enemies, and as the Pimos and Maricopas are our friends, I do not see why I should not rejoice with you."

This response delighted him greatly, and he immediately translated it to the multitude, who greeted me with terrific yells of approbation. Availing myself of the good feeling engendered, I desired my robust friend, whose every limb quivered with excitement, to state to the multitude that my party had gone on a long time before; that the country over which I had to pass was frequently the scene of Apache horrors; and that I had sufficiently expressed my sympathy with the occasion to be allowed to depart in peace. This speech was received with another chorus of yells, and I was gently conducted down the steep, at the base of which I found my horse in safe keeping. My conductors were warmly thanked, and I set off at full gallop to join my comrades, delighted

at having so easily escaped the well meant but revoltin
hospitality of the savages.

Twelve miles further on we entered the Gila Ben
desert. At this point the Gila river trends to the nort
and describes a curve of one hundred and twenty mil
around the northern base of a long range of mountain
resuming its original course westward about fifty mil
from the point of departure. This space of fifty mil
is entirely without water, and is the highway for the Co
oteros and some of the Sierra Blanca Apaches makin
raids upon Sonora. The probabilities were very muc
in favor of meeting one or more war parties of tho
tribes, and we kept a strict lookout during the transi
but failed to see any, although we may have been o
served by them.

On the afternoon of the third day after leaving t
Pimos, we came upon the scene of the Oatman massacr
and as the coyotes had dug up the remains of the mu
dered party, they were carefully and safely re-interr
by us. Here was another caution to beware the treac
ery and malice of the Apaches. The lesson was we
heeded by our little band; but we felt ourselves able
whip five times our number in fair fight, and the stricte
vigilance was observed in passing any place which cou
shelter an ambush. Next day we camped on the Gil
under a splendid grove of high and clear cotton-wo
trees. There was no underbrush for hundreds of yar
in every direction, and our rifles could easily reach t
surrounding expanse, in case of attack, while the friend
trees would afford us good shelter. Every one was bu
—some collecting dry wood for the guard fire, others
cooking, others again in securing the animals and p
viding their food—when I suddenly perceived an Indi
running toward us with both arms raised above his hea

I was about to draw a bead upon the fellow, but seeing that he was alone and unarmed, I refrained, and beckoned him to come forward, which he did with decided good will. He spoke Spanish well enough for all practical purposes, and informed us that he was a Maricopa and had been captured by the Yumas, together with a woman of his tribe, some months before, but had managed to effect his escape a few days before meeting our party, and as he and his companion were starving, they came to ask our assistance, having struck our trail at the entrance to the camp ground. He then uttered a peculiar cry, and was immediately joined by the woman, who had concealed herself to await the issue of his visit. The poor woman presented a thin, worn and suffering appearance, which did not require the use of language to explain. Our first care was to supply these poor creatures with food and a spare blanket each; for, as we had left the higher and colder regions, and were entering upon the warmest known on the globe, and as our means for transportation were becoming beautifully less, we could afford to be generous in this respect, especially as the probabilities were greatly in favor of abandoning or cacheing the major part of our effects, among which were a number of costly instruments, which could neither be eaten nor drunk. No further questions were pressed upon our guests until their hunger had been appeased, when, sitting at the camp fire, the man gave us the following narration, corroborated in all points by his companion.

Some five months previous, a large war party of the Yumas had come up the Gila with the intention of cutting off small detachments of Maricopas and Pimos, who annually visit the Gila Bend desert to collect the fruit of the petajaya, a gigantic species of cactus. This fruit is dried in the sun and closely resembles our figs in point

of size, taste and shape, but the external husk o
ing is not edible. They also macerate it in wat
being dried, when the saccharine qualities cau
liquid to ferment, and after such fermentation it l
highly intoxicating. It is upon this liquor that t
icopas and Pimos get drunk once a year, the reve
tinuing for a week or two at a time; but it is als
versal custom with them to take regular turns,
only one-third of the party is supposed to ind
one time, the remainder being required to take
their stimulated comrades, and protect them fro
ing each other or being injured by other tribe
Yumas are well acquainted with the custom,
party referred to had gone up the Gila to profit
circumstance. In that raid they succeeded in
few Maricopas and taking prisoners the man and
who were then our guests and informants. O
any species of labor and hardship that could be
they were compelled to undergo, until the arri
band of twenty-one Americans with a great ma
which they were driving to California. The
consisting of a Sergeant and ten men, had bee
off by the Yumas just before the advent of these
who were wholly ignorant of the fact, and quit
pared to expect the hostility which terminated w
massacre. They were received by the Yumas wi
profession of friendship, the Indians bringing
quantities of slim, straight and dried cott
branches to build fires with, and rendering the
kindly services, so that all apprehension was co
lulled. While the evening meal was in prepara
Yumas interspersed themselves thickly among th
icans, who had some four fires going, built
Yumas, who had placed the long, smooth cott

branches across each other, in every direction, and the fire as nearly to the center as possible. So soon as those sticks had burned through so as to leave an effective club at each end, a single sharp cry gave the signal, upon which each Yuma present, probably a hundred, seized his burning brand, and commenced the work of death, dealing blows to the nearest American, while another large party rushed fully armed upon the scene, and quickly dispatched their unprepared and unsuspecting visitors. The Americans fought with desperation, discharging their six-shooters and using their knives with bloody effect, but were soon overcome by resistless numbers, and slain to a man. It was during this contest, which engaged the whole attention of the Yumas, that our two guests managed to effect their escape. They had traveled for four days without food, hiding themselves from morning till night, and prosecuting their way only after dark. Seeing a small party of Americans, whom they knew were always friendly to their tribe, and incited by the double motives of obtaining food and warning us of our danger, they had sought our camp.

Our danger was indeed imminent. Our party consisted only of seven Americans and three Mexicans, and our ammunition had been reduced to forty rounds for each weapon. A party of well armed men, more than three times our number, had been massacred only a few days before by a hostile tribe of Indians, through the heart of whose country we would be compelled to make our way, if we continued. The enemy had driven off the miserably small garrison, and were flushed with the success of their last great robbery and murder. The Colorado river was impassable without a launch, and that was in possession of the Indians. We were in a "regular fix," and a council of war was immediately

held. . I am free to acknowledge that I wa
forward, and used every argument to show
iness of such an attempt, but all my object
by the imperturbable Dr. Webb, who cont
with saying—"Our provisions are nearly
ammunition is nearly expended, we are
on, and it is our duty. We may be killed
ter to die fighting, since we have been w
on our guard, than to die of starvation on
deserts. In any case, it is only a choice
it is certain destruction to turn back, whil
age to escape or pass the Yumas in sa
finally agreed to adopt his views—keep a
fight if need be, to the bitter end, and di
the proper discharge of a recognized duty
mination was duly imparted to our Ma
who could not restrain expressions of a
gave us some additional valuable informa
existence of the launches in which to cros
the nature and habits of the Yumas, the
manner of approach, and the best means
Those kindly people were then supplied
enough to last them to their villages, an
us with unfeigned regret, expecting neve
our number again. My next meeting wit
found in a succeeding chapter.

Early next morning we resumed our jou
Gila, and prosecuted it for several days u
the Colorado near its junction with the
period the whole country was a wildernes
now occupied by large houses and well fil
an American population of six or seven
was waste and desolate. The approach
hidden by a dense mass of young willow

which we had to pass in order to reach water, of whicl ourselves and animals were greatly in need. The thermometer stood at 118 degrees Fahrenheit, in the shade and we had marched twenty-four miles that day withou water. On emerging from the willows to the banks o the broad, red, swift and turbid stream which met ou gaze, we discovered, on the opposite side, within eas rifle reach, a large number of Yuma men, women an children, a fact which assured us that our approach ha not been known by that tribe. They instantly fled in al directions, thereby proving their fear and suspicions which would not have been entertained if the two peopl had been at peace with each other. Having watered ou suffering animals, we prosecuted our way down the Colorado, and encamped upon an open sand beach, wit three hundred yards of clear ground in the rear and th river in front. No weapon in possession of the Yumas could reach anything like that distance, while our rifle commanded the whole area. Our animals were draw up in line on the river side with a careful guard, an were fed with an abundance of young willow top which they eat greedily. Our fires were well supplie and kept blazing brightly, so as to shed light on the su rounding shore and disclose the approach of any enem In this manner we passed an anxious night.

The next day, soon after dawn, an Indian presente himself unarmed, and with reiterated assurances of th most cordial friendship for the Americans. He subs quently proved to be Caballo en Pelo, or the "Nak Horse," the head chief of the Yumas. Our receptio was not calculated to excite his hopes, every one exten ing his left hand, and keeping a revolver in his righ and it was not long before Caballo en Pelo found th he had committed himself to the tender mercies of m

who entertained the deepest suspicion
amity. To test his sincerity, Dr. Webl
become of the soldiers, to which he repl
voluntarily withdrawn three months l
knew to be a lie, as Gen. Conde had inf
presence with a couple of good launc
crossing of immigrants, and we had
only twenty days previous, when this
received from him, who had come direc
orado in eleven days. The report of o
ors also disproved the statement of Cal
we immediately consulted together a
course, which was afterward carried i
reader will discover, and to it I attribut
the treacherous Yumas.

We subsequently learned that the p
by the Yumas just before our arrival, w
tin and his band. This man had the re
one of the worst scoundrels who eve
that demoralized and villainous regio
of him, that the Governor of Chihuahu
a premium of thirty dollars for every A
lantin got together a band of cut-thro
the business. But all his activity and
find the Apaches, and scalps became
termined to make money out of the Go
commenced killing Papago, Opatah an
whose scalps he sold in considerable
dollars each, declaring that they had
the heads of Apaches. But the ease w
tin and his band supplied themselves,
any sensible diminution of Apache r
picion, and he was actually caught
from the heads of several Mexicans

n of his professed
bb asked what had
plied that they had
before. This we
nformed us of their
aches to assist the
l met the General
is information was
ectly from the Col-
our Maricopa visit-
aballo en Pelo, and
as to our future
into effect, as the
ate our escape from

persons massacred
were John Gallan-
reputation of being
er existed even in
ion. It is reported
hua, having offered
Apache scalp, Gal-
roats and went into
d cupidity failed to
e very scarce. De-
Governor's terms, he
and Yaqui Indians,
e numbers at thirty
d been taken from
with which Gallan-
, without producing
raids, excited sus-
taking the scalps
s murdered by his

people in cold blood. Finding that he had been
ered in his unspeakable villainies, he fled to New M
where, by stealing and by purchase, he collected
two thousand five hundred head of sheep, with wl
was passing into California, when he encounte
well-merited fate at the hands of the Yumas.
soul of his band escaped death.

At the period about which I am writing, Arizo
New Mexico were cursed by the presence of two
hundred of the most infamous scoundrels it is p
to conceive. Innocent and unoffending men we
down or bowie-knived merely for the pleasure of
ing their death agonies. Men walked the stree
public squares with double-barreled shot gun
hunted each other as sportsmen hunt for gan
the graveyard of Tucson there were forty-seven g
white men in 1860, ten years after the events a
cited, and of that number only two had died
deaths, all the rest being murdered in broils a
room quarrels. Since Carleton's occupation o
Territories with his California Column, a great
for the better has taken place, and this mel
promises to gain ground.

CHAPTER

Fort Yuma.—The Yuma Indians.—Desperate
—Caballo en Pelo.—Method of Camping.
The Launch.—Crossing the Colorado.—M
the Yumas.—Sandstorm in the Desert.—
Sufferings on the Desert.—Carisso Creek.
Officers.—Col. Heintzleman.—Yumas Red

The foregoing digression is exc
that it exposes, to some extent
American people who first made
ance of the Indian tribes occupyi
direct route of migration betwee
cific States, and, in a measure, ac
advances. The Pimos and Maric
excepted from this category, as t
sion, no matter how much goade
ful or adverse spirit toward Am
ner, these remarks cannot appl
never, at any time, ceased the
treacherous attacks.

Soon after Caballo en Pelo, c
entered our camp, he made a s
and we soon had an accession of
ing several of the principal m
They were all unarmed, and eac
sire to maintain friendly relation
Webb, with his usual blunt ho
total neglect of policy, abrup
you mean as you profess, why

X.

ssation.—Dr. Webb's Bluntness.
-Yuma Chiefs our Prisoners.—
rch into the Desert.—Release of
inal Escape from the Yumas.—
Vallecito.—Hospitality of Army
ced to Subjection.

ssable, on the ground
the character of the
the intimate acquaint-
g the country on the
n the Atlantic and Pa-
counts for their hostile
opas must, however, be
ey never, on any occa-
l, exhibited any venge-
ricans. In like man-
to the Apaches, who
r active hostility and

r the "Naked Horse,"
gnal to his associates,
fourteen more, embrac-
n in the Yuma tribe.
one expressed his de-
s with our people. Dr.
nesty of character, and
ly asked them—"If
id you drive away the

small body of soldiers left here to assist the
in crossing the river and supplying their n
why did you massacre the American party w
who came here on their road to California?"
expected queries discomfited the savages, an
"all aback," as may readily be supposed.
Pelo, Pasqual, and several other leading men,
to deny these charges *in toto*, but we were t
formed, and their denials only tended to p
than ever on the *qui vive*.

A few words interchanged between the mem
party decided our course of action. In a
were fully committed, and nothing but peri
ures could decide the result of our desperate
ings. It was determined to hold all the Yu
as captives, subject to instant death upon the
of any hostility on the part of that tribe. W
our lives were at the mercy of those savages,
solved that we should not be sacrificed with
sponding amount of satisfaction. Their pri
were in our camp unarmed; we had the disp
lives in our power, and knew that they could
in the event of any hostile act against our
These deliberations were fully unfolded to
who were informed that no more of their trib
admitted into our camp without jeopardizin
of those already there. They were also tol
ing come of their own free will, they would
to remain during our pleasure, and, in the m
fed from our very limited resources. They w
more informed that the launch which they
from the soldiers would be needed for our
across the Colorado, and as we knew it to
possession, it must be forthcoming when req

first act of Caballo en Pelo
not to approach our camp,
spit, with three hundred y
sides not covered by the ri
claim any inimical design,
his chief men had sought u
have overwhelmed our pa
warriors. He also stated t
ings toward white men con
oppose all from the west,
force from that quarter w
paign against them. They
icans generally, but solely
pected from California wit
en Pelo then asked if he
consider themselves priso
Dr. Webb, who was in ch
to answer—yes, they were
until the launches they ha
produced for our passage
had given satisfactory evi
tions. This abrupt anno
our savage guests, who e
half-uttered threats of v
"in for a penny, in for a
could adopt under the cir
was as unalterable as th
sians.

Dr. Webb furthermore
must order their warriors,
our side the river, not to
yards, adding, "we susp
have the first blood, if a
men are in our power.

o was to signalize his people
, which was located on a sand-
yards clear rifle range on all
ver. He then went on to dis-
, quoting the fact that he and
ns unarmed, when they might
altry force with hundreds of
that they had no hostile feel-
ming from the east, but would
t, as they had learned that a
was being prepared for a cam-
y were not at war with Amer-
ly with those whom they ex-
th warlike intentions. Caballo
and his companions were to
ners. To this home question
arge of our party, directed me
s; and would be held as such,
ad taken from the soldiers were
across the Colorado, and they
idence of their peaceful inten-
ouncement was not pleasing to
exhibited alarm, mingled with
vengeance; but the old motto,
a pound," was the only one we
rcumstances, and our resolution
he laws of the Medes and Per-

informed the Yumas that they
, who were gathering thickly on
approach within three hundred
ect your motives, and intend to
any is to be shed. Your chief
Your people can kill us, as they

---

are so much more numerous, but we
they do not obey our orders which sh
through you."

This was undoubtedly the "tight
ever got in. They were by no mean
a decided stand, and were quite at a
Seeing resolution in each man's eye,
was our determination to put them t
any decidedly hostile step should be
ple, they concluded to make the bes
and escape by strategy from the tra
to spring upon us, but in which the
selves.

Caballo en Pelo made a few signs
and anxious multitude, which then
of sight among the dense willows
markable luxuriance about three hu
river. We then dug two holes, abo
parallel to each other, and each ab
one and a half wide and two deep
made blazing fires which rose abo
above the surface of the ground, an
we ordered the Yumas to lie down,
sentinel with a cocked six-shoote
line of their heads, and another al
feet. A flank escape was impossib
by a bright and hot fire on each si
ing animals were drawn up in line
the camp, with a guard outside
twenty feet of the whole party. W
night, and at early dawn we were
in discussion with the Yumas, wh
hostile motive, and professed ind
ment. We gave them a good brea

them a plentiful supper the evening previous, and then reiterated our demand for the launches, while they as stubbornly denied any knowledge of their existence.

That day we moved down the river about eleven miles and selected a good camp ground early in the afternoon. Again we were surrounded by hundreds of Indians, but the personal fears of our hostages kept them at bay, and they did not approach nearer than three hundred yards. The night passed as the previous one had done, and we perceived it was the intention of the Yumas to wear us out, and then seize their opportunity; but this scheme was frustrated by the nerve and decision of Dr. Webb, who next morning informed Caballo en Pelo and his chief followers, that "we were well aware of the existence of the launches by oral as well as written intelligence; that they were absolutely necessary to cross the Colorado; that we knew the Yumas had driven away the small garrison of American soldiers and had the launches in their possession; that we had met the escaped Maricopas, who told us all about the massacre of Gallantin and his party, and the appropriation of the launches by the Yumas; and, finally, that if those launches were not forthcoming by twelve o'clock the next day, we should at once proceed to extremities and kill him and all the Yumas in our camp."

It may well be supposed that this sort of talk aroused the liveliest alarm among our prisoners, who commenced an excited conversation in their own tongue, which culminated in a request from Caballo en Pelo that one of his young men be permitted to leave our camp and make inquiry if the launches really were in existence, and if so, to bring it down river to our camp. This was agreed to, and a young lad, about eighteen years of age, the son of Pasqual, selected for the business. He was allowed to depart with the positive assurance that we would keep our words in regard to his father and the other head men of the Yuma tribe in our camp.

That night we observed more than the usual precautions, for one-half our number were on guard at all times. Next morning no Indians were to be seen, but at ten o'clock A. M., a large launch, capable of holding half our party with their baggage, was seen approaching under the conduct of two Yumas. It was moored in front of our camp, and immediate preparations were made for crossing. Five of us, taking half the Yuma prisoners, immediately embarked with rifles in hand, ready for use, and as we could easily sweep both sides the river, our party was really as strong as ever. Our mules and horses were made to swim across under the lead and direction of two Yumas, who were kept within range of our rifles, and in this manner we succeeded in gaining the western bank of the Colorado, after three most exciting days of detention amidst overwhelming numbers of hostile savages; but our troubles were not yet ended. We had still to undergo another ordeal, even more perilous, because we had no hostages as securities for our safety from attack.

Having gained the western bank of the Colorado in peace, the Yumas demanded to be released from captivity, but our safety would not permit such a course, and Dr. Webb informed them that they must remain in camp that night and would be set free next day. The utmost precaution was again observed throughout the night, and at three o'clock next morning we were once more *en route* toward California, accompanied by the leading Yumas, who were kept closely guarded. That day we penetrated twenty-eight miles into the great Colorado desert, halting about four o'clock P. M., in a place where

neither water nor wood existed, and completely s
rounded by hills and banks of white sand. With mu
toil several of our number ascended one or two of
highest hillocks, but as far as the eye could reach no
ing was to be seen but one unbroken expanse of san
white, dazzling under the rays of a burning sun, un
lieved by a single bush or shrub—broken and fret
with countless hillocks, and utterly void of animal l
This part of the Colorado desert is much more fright
than the great Sahara of Africa. The absolute stilln
and repose is something awful; it is death in life; i
the most impressive lesson of man's feebleness, and
most startling reproof against his vanity. In our c
these sensations were not mitigated by the knowledge
being surrounded by a fierce, warlike and numerous
dian tribe, thirsting for our blood, and eager to reve
the indignity they had suffered by the captivity of th
head chiefs, and the failure of their treacherous schem

As before stated, we halted and made preparation
if to encamp. Dr. Webb then directed Mr. Thurbe
ascend the highest sand hill in the neighborhood, ex
ine all around with his field glass and report if the
dians were upon our trail. In about half an hour M
Thurber returned, and assured us that from two to th
hundred Yumas were within five miles of our positi
and heading toward our camp. There was no time
lose. Caballo en Pelo with his fellow captives were
mediately informed that they must take the back tr
and return to the river, that our road was toward
west, that we had no more provisions to give them,
that it was indispensable for us to part company th
and there. To these requirements the wily chief dem
red, and stated his desire to go on with us to Califor
He was overruled by the strong persuasive force of dr

ing our pistols, and giving him the sole alternative of obeying or dying. They chose the former, and decamped with haste. So soon as they disappeared round the base of a friendly sand hill, we immediately repacked our wagon, and drove on with all possible speed, hoping to escape in the fast coming darkness.

Eleven years afterward, Pasqual himself told me that they met about three hundred of their warriors half an hour after being expelled from our camp, and the whole band came in pursuit of us, but as the Indian never risks life when he thinks the same end can be accomplished by strategy, and as time is of no moment to them, it was agreed to fall foul of us just before daylight the next morning, and by a rapid and combined assault massacre our little party with comparative ease and impunity. Acting on that policy, they approached our abandoned camp with extreme caution, and commenced a survey from surrounding hillocks. They were not surprised to see no fire, as they knew there was no wood in that part of the desert, and they remained quiescent until nearly morning, when their scouts gave them the unwelcome information that we were gone.

Our flight was continued all night and part of the next day, until overtaken by one of those dreadful sandstorms which prevail on the Colorado desert. The day was intensely hot, and the most oppressive silence seemed to reign absolute. Suddenly a dark, dense and singular looking cloud arose in the west and moved toward us with incredible velocity. Great masses of heavy sand were lifted as if they were so many feathers and carried high into the air with extreme violence. The places formerly occupied by huge hillocks containing many thousand tons of sand, were swept clean as if by magic in a few moments, and the vast banks removed to other lo-

calities in the twinkling of an eye. Our mule
upon their bellies and thrust their noses clo
ground, our horses followed their example—n
could stand against the force and might of th
and we, too, laid down flat, hauling a tent ove
a few moments the tent was so deeply covered
as to retain its position, and every now and the
compelled to remove the swiftly gathering mass
being absolutely buried alive. Amidst the dis
horrible sensations, and the suffocating feeli
sioned by this sirocco, we entertained the grat
of protection from our savage pursuers, who w
as incapable of facing that terrific storm as
For forty-eight hours we had not tasted food,
more than a day without water in the hottes
known to man, and our distress heightened b
tense craving for water invariably attendant
scorching blasts of the desert. These sensati
not alleviated by the fact of knowing that we h
journey of forty miles before we could find wat

About three o'clock P. M., the storm passed of
instantly resumed our way without cooking food
ing could only add to our already terrible thi
that night our weary feet trod that infernal de
the glowing morning sun shone upon us like
molten brass, but we had arrived at a fine camp
thickly supplied with shady mesquit trees and
ing with excellent grass for our worn-out anima
had dwindled down to less than one-half the nu
boasted before crossing the Colorado. About
after camping, the step-father of Inez, who ser
guide, reported that he saw an alamo tree a s
tance off, and he believed that there must be wa
neighborhood. Several of us proceeded to the

in a short time discovered a small pool containing about twenty gallons of water deposited in a hollow by a former copious rain, and sheltered from the sun by friendly brush. The joyful news was soon made known to the rest of our comrades, and our raging thirst slaked, after which the remainder of the water was equally divided among our famishing stock. As Carisso creek was then within a day's march, no thought was taken for the morrow, and after a most refreshing night's rest, we re-commenced our journey at early dawn, reaching Carisso creek about five o'clock on the afternoon of the same day. At this place we felt ourselves wholly safe from the Yumas. There was abundance of pasture, and water and wood, and we would have remained for a day or two to obtain much needed rest, but our provisions had entirely given out, and we had still one hundred miles of travel before us without an ounce of food, unless such as might possibly be procured in the way of game.

With sad hearts and weakened frames we pushed forward until we reached Vallecito, where we found an American garrison consisting of a company of infantry and three officers. By these warm-hearted and gallant gentlemen we were received with the greatest courtesy and kindliness, and entertained by them with a warmth of hospitality which has found an abiding place among my most grateful recollections. Some time had elapsed since supplies were received from San Diego, and they were themselves on "short commons," and unable to furnish us with the provisions needed to complete our journey; but gave us freely to the extent of their power. It would have been gross ingratitude to remain there, living upon the very diminished stores of our kind entertainers, and we again pushed forward the next day. Our course lay over the Volcan mountain, and upon its mag-

nificent height we found a rancho owned a
by a big-hearted gentleman, who ministered
and furnished us with two fresh mules.
resumed our march, and soon after passing
ground of San Pascual met Col. Heintzlem
mand of three hundred troops, on his wa
the Yuma Indians for their many murders a
The officers were surprised to meet us com
river, and asked many questions, which
lighted to answer, giving valuable informati

Col. Heintzleman's force was subsequent
to five hundred men, and after two years' a
he succeeded in reducing the Yumas, who
since presumed to contend against our p
then Fort Yuma has become a noted frontier
surrounded by many hundreds of American
live, for the most part, on the eastern bank
and carry on a lucrative trade with the int
zona and the Yumas, Cocopahs, Cushans, A
other tribes. The waters of the Colorado are
by half a dozen steamers, and my old enemies
do the "chores" and menial offices for the
next day after meeting Col. Heintzleman we
Diego, devoutly thankful to Providence fo
and almost miraculous escapes from the tom
scalping knives of the Indian tribes throu
had passed for the distance of two thousan
dred miles.

and inhabited
ed to our wants
Next day we
g the old battle
eman, in com-
vay to chastise
and robberies.
ming from the
we were de-
ation.
ently increased
active warfare
ho have never
power. Since
er fortification,
n citizens, who
k of the river,
nterior of Ari-
Amojaves and
re now plowed
es, the Yumas,
whites. The
e reached San
for our many
omahawks and
ugh which we
nd eight hun-

CHAPTER XI.

**Letter from Senator Clemens.—Resign from the Boundary Commission.—Depa
ture of the Commission.—New Expedition.—Ride up the Gila.—Territ
Conflict with Apaches.—Desperate Personal Encounter.—Defeat of th
Savages.—Return of the Expedition.—Long for a Quiet Life.—San Fra
cisco.—Cogitations on Indian Character.—Advice Given and Disdained.
The Fatal Results.—Necessity for Constant Caution.—Extent of Apach
Country.—Numerical Strength of the Apaches.—Female Warriors.—Fal
Impressions of Indian Character.**

A WEEK after our safe arrival in San Diego, worn-ou
and suffering from nearly two years' wandering upon th
uninhabited deserts of Texas, Arizona, northern Sonor
and a portion of New Mexico, I received a warm, cordi
and brotherly letter from the Hon. Jere Clemens, Se
ator from Alabama, who had been my Lieutenant-Colon
during a portion of the Mexican war, after the death
Col. Ransom, and the capture of Chapultepec, whic
letter informed me that although the appropriation f
the Boundary Commission had passed Congress, y
John B. Weller, Senator from California, had manage
to have inserted in it a proviso which would have th
effect of rendering that appropriation unavailable, an
that the probabilities were we would be disbanded in th
deserts, without money, or the means of return to o
friends and home at the East. He also advised me
leave the Commission, as we had arrived within the pr
cincts of civilization, and pursue some other avocatio
The advice and arguments of my former superior, who
kindness and remembrance had followed me througho
our toilsome and dangerous career, convinced my mi

of their value, and I resigned my pla
sion. Three weeks afterward it ret
East, while I remained in San Diego.

About a month after the Commiss
carrying with it my warmest and most
ward its gallant and noble-hearted
party of ten men was formed for the p
and exploring a portion of Arizona, wi
and exploit some of its valuable gold
and I was engaged as the interpreter
party, on a salary of five hundred doll

On an appointed day we started, an
march, reached the Colorado, which wa
of an active war against the Yuma Ind
zleman had arrived with his troops and
orous campaign. We were immediate
guard in charge of the launch, and ca
Yumas, who were then supposed to b
Gila, about thirty miles from its junc
orado. In consequence of this warnin
to proceed by night instead of day unt
the field occupied by the savages. Th
two wagons, and the watchful stillness
pressed the savages with the belief
armed body stealing a march upon the
unmolested in the dark, arriving at A
our march from Fort Yuma. Here w
selves comparatively safe from the Yu
posed to visits from the Tonto Apache
northern side of the Gila from Ante
Pimo villages. Our party was well ar
having two revolvers, a good rifle and
we felt ourselves equal to four or five t
of Indians in an open fight, but were a
utmost precaution was necessary at all

lace in the Commis-
eturned toward the
o.
ssion had departed,
ost kindly esteem to-
d members, a small
purpose of entering
with a view to locate
d and silver mines,
er and guide of the
ollars per month.
and after a tedious
was then the theater
ndians. Col. Heint-
nd had begun a vig-
tely crossed by the
cautioned about the
be in force on the
nction with the Col-
ning, we determined
ntil we had passed
The rumbling of our
ess of our party, im-
ef that we were an
hem, and we passed
t Antelope Peak in
we considered our-
Yumas, although ex-
hes, who inhabit the
telope Peak to the
armed, each person
d a large knife, and
e times our number
also aware that the
all times.

Just below and about what is known as Grinne
Station the road is covered from four to five inches d
with a fine and almost impalpable dust, containing
abundance of alkali. The lightest tread sends it in clo
far over head, and a body of men riding together in c
column are so thoroughly enveloped as to prevent
recognizing of each other at the distance of only th
feet. In some places the road passes through the mid
of an extensive plain, apparently incapable of afford
covert to a hare. We had arrived at one of these w
openings, and were inclosed in a cloud of dust so de
as completely to bar the vision of all except the two
occupied the advance. One or two others attempted
ride on one side of the road, but the terrible thorn
the cactus and the pointed leaves of the Spanish bayo
which soon covered their horses legs with blood,
lamed the poor animals, induced them to resume
dusty road. No one expected an attack in so open,
posed and unsheltered a place, yet it was the very one
lected for such a purpose. The wily savages knew that
would be upon our guard in passing a defile, a thick wo
or a rocky cañon; and also judged that we might be ca
less while crossing an open plain. They were well
quainted with the dusty character of the road, and
lying on it to conceal their presence, had secreted the
selves close to its southern edge, awaiting our approa

At a certain spot, where a dozen or two yucca tr
elevated their sharp-pointed leaves about four feet ab
ground, and while we were shrouded in a cloud of du
a sharp, rattling volley was poured into us from a
tance of less than twenty yards. It has always bee
matter of astonishment to me that none of our pa
were either killed or wounded; but we lost two mu
and three horses by that fire. The dense dust preven

the Apaches from taking aim, a
low. It was no time for hesit
at once given to dismount and
distinguish little or nothing;
pended in the direction of the
dark body would be seen and n
as seen. Each man threw hims
but scarcely any could tell wh
It was pre-eminently a fight in
"his own hook."

While we laid prostrate the
and we were about to obtain a
when John Wollaston cried o
making a rush." Each man
hand to hand contest ensued w
tion. It was at this juncture
work, as was afterward shown.
blinding clouds, hurried up by
tending men. We stood as m
each other as by the savages.
tols was heard on all sides, bu
of death were invisible. The
pistol had been exhausted; m
thick dust on the road, and the
a small double-edged, but shar
a black whalebone hilt, and a
the blade. I was just reloadi
robust and athletic Apache, m
stood before me, not more tha
naked with the single exceptio
his person was oiled from hea
in a green hunting frock, edg
green pants, trimmed with b
broad-brimmed felt hat. The

and they fired a little too
itation, and the order was
l fight on foot. We could
, shot after shot was ex-
e savages; now and then a
made a target of as soon
nself flat upon the ground;
here his companions were.
in which each man was on

he dust settled somewhat,
good sight of the enemy,
out—"Up boys, they are
rose at the word, and a
which beggars all descrip-
that our revolvers did the
n. Again the dust rose in
y the tramping feet of con-
much chance to be shot by
The quick rattling of pis-
ut the actors in this work
last charge of my second
ny large knife lost in the
he only weapon left me was
arp and keen, dagger, with
about four inches long on
ling a six-shooter, when a
much heavier than myself,
an three feet off. He was
ion of a breach cloth, and
ad to foot. I was clothed
lged with black, a pair of
black welts, and a green,
e instant we met, he ad-

---

vanced upon me with a long and keen knife
he made a plunge at my breast. This attack
stopping his right wrist with my left hand,
same moment I lunged my small dagger f
domen. He caught my right wrist in his le
for a couple of seconds—a long time under s
stances—we stood regarding each other, m
holding his right above my head; and his l
my right on a level with his body. Feeling
greased, and that I had no certain hold, I
with a sudden and violent pass of the right
brought him to the ground, but in falling h
carried me down with him. In a moment t
savage gained the ascendant, and planted hi
on my person, with his right knee on my le
fining it closely, and his left arm pinioning
the ground, while his right arm was free.
pletely at his mercy. His personal strength
were greater than mine. His triumph and d
from his glittering black eyes, and he res
nothing of his savage enjoyment. Holdin
with the grasp of a giant, against which all
were wholly vain, he raised aloft his long,
and said—"Pindah lickoyee das-ay-go, dee-
which means, "the white-eyed man, you
dead." I thought as he did, and in that f
ment made a hasty commendation of my sou
nevolent, but I am afraid that it was mingle
scheme to get out of my predicament, if pos

To express the sensations I underwent at
is not within the province of language. My
useless life passed in review before me in les
stant of time. I lived more in that minute
deadly struggle than I had ever done in yea

was wholly powerless, I gav
victim to Apache ferocity.
upon me with intense delig
the death-stroke for the pu
upon my fears and inexpres
pired in less than half a n
hours. Suddenly he raised
stroke. I saw the descendin
and knew the force with wh

The love of life is a stron
be killed like a pig, by an A
dreadful and contumelious.
knife, aimed full at my th
body made that the most p
stantly I twisted my head a
blow and prolong life as n
blade passed in dangerous
buried itself deeply in the
silk cravat, while his right
my mouth, and was as quic
His struggles to free hims
depended on holding fast.
released his grasp of my ri
with his left hand, but th
treme pain, reversed the w
my antagonist could extric
with his left hand, and wh
tween my teeth, I circled h
and faithful dagger twice
his left arm, at the same ti
effort to throw off his weig
in a few moments had the
emy gasping his last unde
guage would fail to convey

ve myself up for lost—another
His bloodshot eyes gleamed
ight, and he seemed to delay
rpose of gladdening his heart
ssible torture. All this trans-
minute, but to me it seemed
d his right arm for the final
ing blow of the deadly weapon,
which it was driven.
ng feeling at any time; but to
Apache, seemed pre-eminently
s. Down came the murderous
hroat, for his position on my
prominent part of attack. In-
and neck one side to avoid the
much as possible. The keen
s proximity to my throat, and
soft soil, penetrating my black
t thumb came within reach of
ickly seized between my teeth.
nself were fearful, but my life
. Finding his efforts vain, he
right arm and seized his knife
he change, effected under ex-
whole state of affairs. Before
cate his deeply-buried weapon
hile his right was held fast be-
his body and plunged my sharp
between his ribs, just under
ime making another convulsive
ght. In this I succeeded, and
satisfaction of seeing my en-
r my repeated thrusts. Lan-
y anything like my sensations

during that deadly contest, and I wi
task.

About the same time the battle te
defeat of our assailants, who lost ten
wounded, how many we never knew.
lost one man—James Kendick—and h
viz: John Wollaston, John H. Marb
Heuston. Heuston and Marble died
soon after reaching Tucson, although
kindest nursing and attention from th
gentleman, Juan Fernandez, and hi
This sad result broke up the party,
San Diego shortly afterward with a p
coming to California.

The above was one of the few occa
Apaches have boldly attacked travele
could expect no great booty and lose n
flict. They were probably incited t
some more than usually daring spirit,
affair and trusted for success in its d
expected nature. We were precisely
country which afforded no ostensible
quently made us less cautious. They
ter of the road, and the blinding natu
the dust. They depended upon the
number of our party, and produce a
survivors. They counted upon a sur
victory, and expected to inherit our h
and provisions. They had conceive
gallantly, but were frustrated, althoug
of the saddest nature to our small com
pletely upset our original intentions by
odore Heuston, who was the capitali
the expedition.

This event initiated me into another phase of Apache character I had never before seen. It proved that they are capable of bold and dangerous undertakings under very adverse circumstances, or when the chances are nearly evenly balanced; but this seldom occurs, as they almost invariably have opportunities to examine, at their leisure, all persons or parties who enter the regions inhabited by them, and form their plans so as to take every advantage with the least possible chance of losing a man.

After my return to San Diego, I determined to forsake my wild, almost nomadic life, and return to civilized existence. I was tired and disgusted with the incessant watchfulness, the unceasing warfare, and unrequited privations I had suffered. Life had been a round of contentions for two years. I had passed through an unbroken series of tribulations and dangers during that period. Hunger, thirst, severe cold and excessive heat, with much personal peril, had been my invariable concomitants, and I panted for a more quiet life. San Francisco held forth the only inducement on this coast, and thither I wended my way, on the steamer Sea Bird, then commanded by Capt. Healey, with Gorman as mate.

As this narrative is wholly devoted to incidents and adventures among Indian tribes, the author will be excused from giving a recital of his life until he was again compelled, in obedience to orders, to renew acquaintance with nomadic races. It is sufficient to say, that twelve years elapsed before such intimacy was effected, faithful details of which will be given in the succeeding chapters.

During the period of quiescence from exciting life which succeeded two years' eventful wanderings across the North American continent, abundant opportunities existed for reconsidering and drawing just inferences from the past. The conclusions arrived at then appeared well founded, if judged from the light of the experiences through which I had passed; but a subsequent career, under unusually favorable circumstances, gave me to comprehend how much my early judgment had erred. I had seen but the outside—had witnessed but the husk; the interior—the kernel of the nut—still remained untasted and unknown. I had flattered myself with having achieved a fair knowledge of Indian character. I believe my personal observations had been sufficient to instruct me on that subject. Former travels through South America, from Buenos Ayres to Valparaiso—when I was a sort of captive among the Patagonian Indians for seven months—seemed to justify me in thinking I had made a correct analysis of Indian traits. But I was much in error. Sufficient credit had not been given to their mental powers, their ability to calculate chances, to estimate and foresee the plans of others, to take precautions, to manœuvre with skill, to insure concert of action by a recognized code of signals, to convey information to succeeding parties of the route, numbers and designs of those who preceded, and to bring together formidable bodies from distant points without the aid of messengers. Much, very much, was yet to be learned.

A boy of twenty years is very apt to credit himself with having acquired a very satisfactory idea of human nature, and no amount of instruction and advice from his elders will induce him to change his views until a fuller experience makes him realize the fact that when he thought himself master of the situation, he was in reality only entering upon its rudimental knowledge. Of all people, Americans seem less inclined to receive

and profit by the advice of others founded upon a lar
and more matured experience. They want to know
themselves, and place the most abiding faith in th
own judgment and readiness of resource. They seen
regard a warning as a sort of reflection upon their p
sonal courage or skill, and frequently treat frien
counsel with somewhat of petulance. A most lamen
ble instance of this nature occurred to myself. A
my second term of military service in Arizona, I was
turning home via Fort Yuma, when I received an int
duction to a Paymaster, with the rank of Major, in
Regular service. Dr. Tappan, Assistant Surgeon of V
unteers, was present at the time, and asked me to f
him with some instructions in reference to the march
camping grounds, distances, and dangers to be met
their projected route up the Gila river to the place
merly known as Fort Breckinridge. It was clearly
duty, as well as my pleasure, to put him in possessio
all the knowledge I had gleaned in reference to th
points, and I closed my information by tracing a ma
the route, and volunteering advice to the following ef

You must never, said I, permit your zeal to out
your discretion. Remember that a well appointed
careful party may travel through Arizona from one ye
end to the other, without ever seeing an Apache, or
trace of his existence, and from this cause travelers
quently become careless and fall an easy prey to th
sleepless watchfulness. Indeed, it is not difficul
point out many who have no faith in their appa
ubiquity, but believe that they must be sought in th
strongholds. There are others again who will no
convinced that the eyes of these Indians are always u
them, because they see nothing to indicate that fact;
the truth is, every move you make, every step you

vance, every camp you visit, is seen and noted by them, with the strictest scrutiny. If they perceive that you are careful, prepared for any contingency, and always on your guard, they will hesitate about making any attack with ten times your force, especially if your party does not offer sufficient inducement in the matter of plunder. But if they observe the least neglect, or want of precaution on your part, you will be assaulted at the very moment, in the very place, and under circumstances when least expected, with every probability of success in their favor. I further remarked, your party, I understand, will be a small one, of not more than ten or twelve persons, including an escort of nine men of the Regular Infantry. None of these men have probably ever been in an Indian country, and, if they have, no experience elsewhere will avail them among the Apaches, whose mode of warfare is so entirely at variance with those of all other tribes. The Regular soldiers, in order to preserve the polish and fine appearance of their guns, are in the habit of carrying them in covers and unloaded. This should be avoided. The men should be made to carry their muskets loaded, capped, and ready for action at a second's warning. They must be restrained from straggling, and moved in such order as will guarantee the greatest amount of security to every individual. Special care should be observed soon after entering a camping ground, when the men generally lay aside their weapons and separate into detachments to bring wood and water. I cannot too strongly impress you with the necessity for a rigid observance of this caution in all cases where the party is small, and no sufficient armed body left in camp, or provided as guards for the protection of those engaged in other necessary duties.

Dr. Tappan thanked me cordially for the information

imparted, and especially for the advice given in
to the Apaches, but the Major rather coolly i
that he was quite capable of managing his ow
and had seen enough of Indian life to put him i
sion of all necessary information. I touched my
withdrew somewhat mortified. Soon afterwar
gence was received that the Major, Dr. Tappan
others had been killed at the Cotton-wood Sp
the Apaches. It seems that soon after enteri
the camp ground, the party broke into small
squads, which went in search of wood and to
ter, when their ever-watchful and tigerish fo
the opportunity to dash in and massacre all th
In this miserable manner the lives of two valu
cers and three brave men were sacrificed for th
a little caution which could have been easily e

Let it be borne in mind at all times that the
have scarcely ever been known to make a fighti
at night. Under cover of the darkness they
into camp and conceal themselves from detec
wondrous skill, in the hope of effecting a rob
that is the extent of their night operations, un
become emboldened by the most reckless and
carelessness. Their onslaughts are almost i
made by day, and at such times and places a
impart the greatest sense of security. When t
mischief no marks are to be seen—no traces,
no "signs" discoverable. The unsuspecting
lulled into a fatal belief that none of them are
laxes his caution, and is caught as surely as t
meshes the confiding fly. I have seen men, w
in company with large and well armed parties,
seen an Apache after a year of wandering in th
try, actually doubted the existence of thos

except amidst their strongholds, until a recklessness begotten of unbelief, induced them to relax their watchfulness and incur special risks. In some cases, they have succeeded and got off scot free, but in ninety out of a hundred they have either fallen victims to misplaced confidence, or escaped almost by miracle. Let no one flatter himself with the idea that, from the moment he has passed the Pimo villages, he is at any time unobserved by the Apaches. Being a non-productive race, subsisting wholly on plunder and game, and incapable of providing a commissariat which will maintain any considerable body for even a week or two, they are scattered in small but active parties throughout the whole of Arizona, a large part of New Mexico, and all the northern portions of Chihuahua and Sonora, and in some parts of Durango. The territory over which they roam, and in which they appear to be ubiquitous, is more than three times larger than California; and California possesses more area than all the New England States, together with New York and New Jersey. This is to say, that the country over which the Apache race holds the mastership—which is literally the fact—is nearly as extensive as all the States which border on the Atlantic and the Gulf of Mexico put together. No great expenditure of arithmetic is necessary to prove that, to domineer over a region so vast, to guard all its passes, to keep watchmen on all the principal heights overlooking the plains usually traveled, to keep up a regular system of videttes over its expanse, to strike a half dozen places two and three hundred miles apart at the same time, to organize parties for scouring the wide valleys and attending the movements of travelers, and to be a terror and a scourge throughout its whole area, must employ the utmost resources, activity and energy of a

numerous people, exceedingly vigilant and
movements.

Casual observers have, unintentionally,
evil by underrating their real strength, to
most inconceivable among those who are bet
I have been in company with a body of fif
at the very time that intelligence was re
half dozen other parties, numbering fro
three hundred each, were actively engage
ting depredations at other points embrace
of five hundred miles, and yet I have seen
of Apaches estimated as low as fifteen hun
thousand. Nearly eight years of persona
have satisfied me that the Apache race, col
number fully twenty-five thousand souls.
mate the Navajoes and Lipans are not inclu
are who inhabit portions of northwestern
this number five thousand are capable of t
and bearing an active part in their system
boy of fourteen is quite as formidable an a
man of forty. From behind his rocky ramp
covert he speeds a rifle ball as straight to t
foe, while his chances for escape, in the ev
are greater than those of his more aged a
sociate. Many of the women delight to
predatory excursions, urging on the men,
taking part in conflicts. They ride like
handle their rifles with deadly skill. I ca
why the bullet sped by a woman should
much an object of danger as the one shot fr
of a man. In the estimate made, no accou
the fighting women, who are numerous, we
desperate, often exhibiting more real cou
men.

apid in their

done serious
an extent al-
er informed.
een hundred
eived that a
n twenty to
in commit-
in a radius
the number
dred and two
experiences
ectively, will
In this esti-
ed, but those
Mexico. Of
king the field
f warfare. A
tagonist as a
rt or wooded
e heart of his
nt of failure,
d heavier as-
articipate in
and actually
centaurs and
not conceive
ot be quite as
m the weapon
nt is taken of
l trained, and
age than the

If any one indulges the idea that the Apaches are weal and few; that they can be reduced to submission by th establishment of scattered forts in the regions occupie by them; that they can be tamed, and rendered peaceable under any circumstances; that they are to be boun and holden by treaty stipulations; that they are susceptible of any law except the *lex talionis*, or are to b constrained by any rule but that of the *argumentum a* *hominum*, they are wonderfully in error. The succeedin chapters of this unpretending volume of personal experience—acquired after nearly eight years of extraordinar facilities to learn the truth—will probably have the effec to disprove these sophistries in a convincing manner And here, *I assert*, that I was in every way predispose to offer every kindly act toward that race. Admirin their unyielding resistance; their acknowledged prowess their undisputed skill and dexterity; their undoubted intelligence and native force of character; acquainted wit their language, traditions, tribal and family organizations, and enjoying their confidence to a degree neve before accorded to any but an Apache, I strenuousl used every effort in consonance with my orders and plai duties, to better their condition, and instill such information as would best conduce to their future peace an happiness. These facts will appear in the course of m narrative, together with the lamentable failure of all conciliatory schemes, which were notably aided and seconde by the commanding General and his subalterns.

CHAPTER

Enter the Volunteer Service.—The Column from
Visited by Yumas.—Making Metates.—Get
Maricopas Again.—Carrying the Mails.—Sn
Col. Rigg.—The Maricopas Recognize me
Killmoon.—Another Remarkable Lunar Pe
ance.—Bargaining for Chickens.—Magic Vi
of the Burning Glass.

Ten years had passed away befor
ance with "Lo." It had been n
solemn resolve never more to rev
much suffering and personal risk.
would have proved a sufficient indu
resolve. But the dreadful war of
fury over our heads. My country
her loyal sons, and I quietly placed
as Captain of a company of the Se
nia Volunteers. General James H.
to advance into Arizona and New M
of nearly three thousand Californi
of artillery, infantry and cavalry.
to select my company from my reg
part of his force. Although flatter
as mine was the only company of
attached to his column, I felt by
with the prospect of again traveli
sive, and most inhospitable deser
and scorching plains, over which th
undisturbed rule. In military life
the first requisite of a soldier, and

XII.

California.—Antelope Peak.—
Rid of them by a Ruse.—The
all Force in Camp.—Visit of
—Their Gratitude.—Captain
rformance.—Loring's Assist-
tues of the Compass.—Effect

e I renewed acquaint-
y fervent desire and
isit the scenes of so
No pecuniary offer
cement to forego that
rebellion burst with
eeded the help of all
myself in their ranks
ond Cavalry, Califor-
Carleton was ordered
Iexico, with a column
n soldiers, consisting
He did me the honor
iment and make it a
d by the compliment,
the Second Cavalry
no means delighted
ng those arid, exten-
s, mountain gorges,
e Apache held almost
obedience to order is
of course I submitted

without murmur to this unexpected and dis
mandate.

It is foreign to the text of this work to ente
tails of experiences not indicative of Indian
and I will, therefore, pass over the many oc
of military life during the trying winter of
1862, when nearly the whole State was overflo
over sixty millions of dollars worth of property
by the floods. It is not necessary to recite the
labors performed by the column from Californi
ing roads; digging and restoring wells in dese
constructing bridges; establishing depots;
trains, and sending forward advanced bodies o
tion; for certain intelligence had been receive
enemy were advancing upon the frontiers of t
and were not far from Fort Yuma. All the
have no connection with this volume, and will
be ignored.

I was ordered in the advance by Gen. Carle
instruction to occupy the pass at Antelope Pea
arrival. On reaching that place I found that
river had made great inroads upon the *mesa*
land between it and the hill, until only a p
something like a hundred yards intervened.
pass I took possession, drawing up my two wa
picket line in such a manner as to intercept a
while a lookout was maintained during the day
top of the peak, and a well ordered patrol sco
country for a space of ten miles to the eastw
times of day and night. During our occupanc
pass a band of Yumas, about thirty in number,
riors, came up from the Colorado river to collec
and make *metates* for their wives. The *metate* is
hollowed hard stone, upon which soaked mai

and then reduced to paste by the v
other oblong and partially rounde
of squaws "who love their lords."
is then patted between the hands
thin and round appearance, when
and baked into a *tortilla*. As no
character are found in the neighbo
river, nearer than Antelope Peak,
that place to obtain them, as the
able culinary utensil.

Three days after we had occu
visited by the Yumas, who immed
lecting stones and hewing them i
in their rude manner. But it w
several blankets, and a revolver,
ponsible, had disappeared, and I
of my Yumas friends soon—by st
force if need be. The deadly fe
and the Maricopas and Pimos h
and the knowledge of this feud
The sentinel on the hill was instr
to indicate the advance of a body
answer, when questioned, that the
side of the compass was occupied
and Pimos, such an arrangemen
the effect of alarming the Yumas
presence. In obedience to ord
made and the programme carried
greatly alarmed, and inquired w
them from the Maricopas. My
nothing at all to do with their q
copas were as much our friends
possessed no power to take side
servient to the orders of my

gorous friction of an-
l stone, in the hands
The paste so formed
ntil it assumes a flat,
it is laid on a hot pan
stones of a suitable
rhood of the Colorado
he Yumas yearly visit
metate is an indispens-

ied the pass we were
iately set to work se-
to the required shape
s soon discovered that
for which I was res-
determined to get rid
atagem if possible, by
d between the Yumas
s already been stated,
erved me in the case.
icted to give the alarm
from the east, and to
were Indians. As that
only by the Maricopas
would probably have
and ridding us of their
r the signal was duly
out. The Yumas were
hether I would protect
nswer was, that I had
uarrels; that the Mari-
as the Yumas; that I
, but was entirely sub-
hief, and that, if they

would procure such an order, I would obey
letter, but under any other circumstances refu
action in the premises. This was enough. Ha
ling up their *metates* they decamped with the
lerity and left us undisturbed during the re
our stay at Antelope Peak.

Sometime afterward we reached the first Ma
lage, where I was ordered to establish my
keep up communications between the column
fornia. Lieut.-Col. Theodore Coult, of the in
in command at the central village, twelve mi
my post, and successive orders of his reduce
to the Orderly Sergeant, E. B. Loring, (subequ
tain of Co. A, Second Cavalry, Cal. Vols.) one
a broken arm, and myself. My chief bugler
termaster-Sergeant, George Shearer, had been
across the Gila Bend, sixty-five miles, with the
orders to bring forward the return mails from
Our camp was located on an extensive, clear
ered with short, green alkaline grass, wholl
our animals, of which we had twenty-seven,
horses and mules. There was also about fift
dollars worth of Government property to b
and for which I was responsible. By digg
or two, water was obtainable in abundance,
so deeply impregnated with alkali as to be
drinkable. However, there was nothing e
and we were compelled to use it or die of th
camp ground was nearly two miles west from
est Maricopa village, and had frequently be
by the Apaches. As our animals were sicke
grass about us, it became indispensable to gr
a more favorable locality which existed about
further westward, and exactly where the Ap

frequently visitors. Fortu
tentions at that time. Ou
the whole expanse around
of redoubt of earth, as a de
which our ammunition, sp
sonal effects were enscon
the other slept. Our anim
could be swept by our fire
as to furnish additional def
inglorious manner several
of Col. E. A. Rigg, who wa
brought to his knowledg
them to the commanding
dered once more in the a
of my company reunited u

The grazing ground to
stay near the Maricopa vi
desperate conflict betwee
one side, and the Yumas
on the other. Victory r
Pimos, who slew over fou
and so humiliated them
made on their part to ren
curred four years before o
strewed with the skulls a
riors. Every day large nu
my camp and were recei
never failed to appreciat
chief, Juan Chivari, and
me a visit, and almost im
man who, ten years befo
title of "Captain Killm
took when Lieut. Whipp
the moon. I acknowled

nately, we escaped their at-
r far-reaching carbines swept
us, and we had formed a sort
fense in case of attack, within
are arms, provisions and per-
ced. One kept guard while
als were placed in a line which
, and the wagons so arranged
ense. In this unpleasant and
days passed, until the arrival
s quite astonished at the facts
e and immediately imparted
General, by whom I was or-
lvance, and the major part of
nder my control.
which we resorted during our
llages had been the scene of a
that tribe and the Pimos, on
, Chimehuevis, and Amojaves,
ated with the Maricopas and
hundred of the allied tribes,
that no effort has ever been
w hostilities. This battle oc-
ur advent, and the ground was
nd bones of slaughtered war-
mbers of the Maricopas visited
ed with kindness, which they
e. On one occasion the head
his Lieutenant, Palacio, paid
mediately recognized me as the
re, they had dubbed with the
on," by reason of the part I
le was observing an eclipse of
ged the soft impeachment and

was received with every demonstration
kindness. Messengers were dispatche
Maricopa man and woman we had suc
twelve years before; and, although they
miles distant, in another village, in les
they were hugging and embracing me
warmest friend. This recognition and
slight services rendered touched me n
when the priceless information they imp
was probably the means of saving our li
gift within my possession was freely an
ferred upon these two deserving being
they were, who had married and we
peaceable lives together.

One afternoon Palacio said to me:
moon once, and brought it to life again.
You are a great medicine. You were
You are here once more. I have told
of the affair; but they will not believ
dreds were witnesses. When can yo
again, and prove the fact?"

An almanac happened to be within
ferred to it for the next lunar eclipse.
prise, it stated that a full eclipse of tha
take place two nights from that date.
greatest composure, I told Palacio t
bring his people to my camp two night
and wait till a certain hour, I would ag
and again restore her to life. This p
extensively spread throughout all the v
day my camp was thronged, from m
with Maricopas and Pimos anxious to
had reported correctly. They were
affirmative, and sent away with very mi

Before the time for slaughter arrived, I visited the grazing ground and selected seven finely polished skulls of Yumas, which I kept concealed in a sack. A quantity of powder was then mixed and made into a paste, and so arranged as to compose fuses. A few iron filings were mixed with several of these fuses, and a number of carbine caps arranged in such a manner as to flash and snap when required. The skulls were placed in a circle, the center of which I was to occupy. In each one was a burning candle, the light from which shone through the eye sockets. In front of every skull was a small fuse, and from each fuse led a train of dry powder to the center of the ring. Back of the fuses were placed considerable charges of dry powder, which would explode so soon as the fuses burned to their locations, and which explosion would immediately extinguish the candles, leaving all in darkness. The skulls were also attached to each other by a fine but strong thread, and the thread to a small twine, which, when drawn in, would bring the whole affair in a pile, and allow of their secretion. All my designs were confided to Loring, the Orderly Sergeant, and our plans laid.

Long before the appointed time, (about ten o'clock P. M.) the camp was crowded by excited Pimos and Maricopas. Probably three thousand were present. It was necessary to distract their attention from my movements, and I directed Sergeant Shearer to draw them off by some device from my immediate neighborhood. In this he succeeded admirably. No one was present to observe what I did. The skulls were properly arranged; the fuses, powder and caps laid, and candles lighted; and I took my place in the center, armed with a sabre, my head and right shoulder bare, and my gaze fixed on the moon, which was about to be obscured. The signal was given, and Shearer led the excited crowds toward my position. With great ceremony I drew a circle round the lighted skulls, and forbade the already frightened audience from passing that bound on pain of death. I sat in the center of the circle, with my head between my hands, waiting for time to pass until the eclipse should be complete, or nearly so. The silence and anxiety of that immense crowd of savages was something fearful. I was undertaking a dangerous experiment. If it failed, the consequences might be fatal; if it succeeded, my influence among them would be almost unbounded. Circumstanced as I was, the thing was worth trying. As an officer of my country, I felt the necessity of obtaining a moral as well as physical ascendancy of these populous tribes, which occupied the highway of immigration between the East and the West. I was almost alone among them, and they had begun to despise the paucity of my force. It had become necessary to re-assert our superiority, and the adventitious circumstances before related favored my attempt. Crouched down, with a naked sabre in my hand, gleaming with the lights thrown through the sightless sockets of the encircling skulls, I impatiently waited the time to apply the match to my train. It came at last. The train was touched; the brilliant flame flashed with the speed of lightning and ignited the fuses, which fizzed and sputtered, and sent forth streams of bright sparks, lighting up the scene with somewhat of radiance, when suddenly the whole affair terminated in darkness. The change from intense light was so great that no one observed Shearer draw in and secrete the skulls, and when vision was restored the whole paraphernalia had passed away. In the meantime, the moon began to reappear; its disc became rapidly more observable and brilliant, until she again "O'er the dark her sil-

ver mantle threw" in all its splendor. The effect up
the surrounding Indians I can not pretend to describ
but the *sobriquet* of "Captain Killmoon" was unan
mously adopted as a very proper appellation. Abo
one o'clock A. M. the savages retired, and left us to t
enjoyment of a hearty laugh and undisturbed repose.

Two days afterward I had occasion to visit the he
quarters of Col. Coult, and received his hospitalit
That officer informed me that since our arrival the I
dians had increased their prices for ground provision
poultry, etc., five and six hundred per cent. Chicken
which had been a drug at a bit a piece, were then wor
seventy-five cents. I told the Colonel that I could o
tain all I required at twenty-five cents each, and he co
missioned me to purchase a dozen or more on his accoun
This statement of mine had been made off-hand, a
without any deliberation. I had bought only three
four chickens, and had no right to determine the m
ket; but as the promise was given, it was my duty to f
fill it, even at expense to myself. Here, again, strate
came into play. "Captain Bob Shorty" was once m
at his old tricks.

I was the fortunate possessor of a powerful mag
and a fine pocket compass, and with these instrument
resolved to test the acumen of my savage friends.
strong burning glass aided me greatly, as it did
subsequent occasions, to obtain their implicit trust a
confidence. Armed with these peaceable weapons, I
formed the Maricopas that chickens would find a re
market in my camp, and in a few hours several do
were proffered. Determined upon paying only a f
price, I coolly commenced rolling a cigarito, at the sa
time giving one to a Maricopa, who went to the ca
fire and got a light, with which he returned and p

fered me the civility of igniting my cigarito from his. This did not suit my purpose, and taking my burning glass, I said—"Do you think that a 'Great Medicine' like me would light his cigar from common fire? No; I will draw it from heaven," and, suiting the action to the words, I drew a focus in that glaring sun, which soon gave me the needed fire. This simple achievement filled them with unbounded astonishment, and prepared them for the reception of other miracles. Turning to a warrior who appeared a person of some consequence, I ordered him to produce his chickens, whereupon half a dozen of fair quality were offered for sale. I took them one by one in my hand, appeared to go through a most careful examination, and then suddenly turning to the man, inquired what he meant by trying to deceive me. The poor fellow was exceedingly mortified, and asked in what particular. The reply was, you have offered to sell me sick chickens, unfit for food, and are therefore attempting an imposition. He stoutly denied the charge, insisting that the chickens were sound and well. We will soon test that, I answered, and then deposited my fine pocket compass on the ground, holding the magnet concealed in the hollow of my left hand. The needle soon ceased oscillating and settled down to its proper pointings, when the Indian was requested to turn the compass round, which he did, and, to his great wonder, the needle again resumed its normal situation. After several essays of this kind, he became convinced that the north pole would invariably point northward, no matter what changes were made in the position of the case. So soon as the required impression had been effected, they were told to lay their chickens, one after the other, either on the east or west side of the compass, and informed that if the birds were good and healthy no change would be observed in the instrument; but if not, the north pole

would point directly at the object and detect t
sition. These injunctions were implicitly follo
keeping the magnet in my left hand, with the
ger of the right, I approached the instrument,
several cabalistic words, and described a half ci
to and about the case. Of course, no move
lowed, and the chicken was accepted at the pri
In this manner two or three were bought; but t
my turn. Changing the magnet into the holl
right hand, I again approached the compass, at
pole, and instantly it commenced to circle roun
dience to well known causes, and under full
the magnet, until the north pole pointed exac
the doomed chicken. There! I exclaimed, in
simulated indignation, did I not tell you tha
your chickens were sick and bad? Do you
cheat a "Great Medicine?" If you are not m
for the future, you may possibly be visited by
which will kill off all your fowls.

By this time a large and anxious crowd had
to witness this new and extraordinary test, a
tempt to describe their wonderment would b
Realizing the impression made, I then contin
following strain: I do not believe that you m
bad, but rather give you credit for ignorance,
claim that all the sick chickens shall be forfei
for I can cure them, and make them ultimat
This proposition was eagerly accepted, *nem. c*
this manner I secured six dozen of excellent b
rate of two bits each, while only twelve miles
brother officers were paying six bits each f
birds. The Indians, knowing us to be in t
for supplies of this kind, had raised the price
dred per cent., and I had turned the scales ag
by a very simple process.

CHAPTER XIII.

Sent to the Front.—Dreadful Storm at the San Pedro River.—Night Alarm.—Apaches Gathering.—Dragoon Springs.—Capt. Thomas Roberts.—Apache Pass.—Bloody and Desperate Fight with Apaches.—The Savages Whipped.—Remarkable Infantry March.—Heroism of John Teal.—He wounds Mangas Colorado, and whips off Fifteen Apaches.—Gallantry of Sergeant Mitchel and his Cavalry.—Effect of Shelling the Apaches.—Number of Indians Killed.—Our Losses.—Re-enter the Pass.—Refused Permission to Charge.—San Simon.

In consequence of the report made by Lieut.-Col. E. A. Bigg, Gen. Carleton again ordered me in the advance, with Capt. Thomas Roberts, Co. E, First California Infantry. Arriving at the San Pedro river, it became necessary to learn whether Dragoon Springs, some twenty-eight miles further on, could supply both companies, at a time, with water, or whether we would be obliged to break into detachments. Capt. Roberts took the advance with his infantry and three wagons, having also selected seven of my best mounted men to serve as scouts and couriers. I remained behind with fifteen of my cavalry and ten of Roberts' company, including the detachment left as a garrison at the river, where a tolerable adobe building, erected by the Overland Mail Stage Company, afforded decent shelter, and a defensible position.

The night after Roberts left was one of the most stormy I ever witnessed. The rain descended in floods. Earth and sky appeared thunder riven; blazing lightnings leaped from the inky clouds, and absorbed the Cimmerian darkness with their blinding flashes. The San

Pedro roared and foamed, the animals qu
before the storm, and all nature seemed
was in charge of sixteen wagons with th
precious freight, and my chief attention
secure their safety. Experience had taug
Apaches would select exactly such a time
attempt, and I doubled my sentries. Th
on the earthen floor, in front of a dece
removing my side arms or any portion of
endeavored to obtain some repose. Abo
A. M., I was aroused by the Sergeant of
informed me that strange lights were
down the hills on the west, north and
hasty survey showed me four lights, as o
brands, on three different sides of the co
parently approaching the station. I felt
this open demonstration, that no attack
for, in that case, the greatest secrecy an
have been observed by the Apaches. N
garrison was summoned and disposed to
tage. All fires were extinguished, and all
from observation. In the course of a fe
or eight more lights made their appeara
to be carried by persons walking at a ra
of them approached within, what I cons
dred yards of the station, and at one ti
inclined to try the effect of a chance sh
but gave up the idea from the conviction
would carry a torch within that distanc
an erect position, while my fire might ex
of my men and draw a more effective
hour and a half of anxious watch, the
united and faded away toward the east.

It was not until more than a year ha

uailed and bent
l convulsed. I
heir mules and
was elicited to
ght me that the
to make a bold
hrowing myself
nt fire, without
f my clothing, I
out two o'clock
the guard, who
visible coming
south sides. A
of large burning
ompass, and ap-
t convinced from
was meditated,
nd caution would
Nevertheless, the
o the best advan-
ll lights shrouded
ew minutes seven
ance, and seemed
apid pace. Some
sidered, two hun-
ime I felt greatly
hot from my rifle,
n that no Apache
ce, and maintain
xpose the persons
return. After an
lights gradually
s.
ad elapsed that I

learned the meaning of this occurrence. A celebrate
leading man of the Mescalero Apaches, named Gian-nal
tah, or "Always Ready," gave the desired informatio
which precisely tallied with succeeding events. He sai
that, as the Apaches are a dispersed and perpetuall
wandering race, it is impossible for one detachment t
know where others might be at any time; but that whe
a great body of them was needed for any joint under
taking they made smoke signals of a certain characte
by day, and signals of fire by night. That, on the occa
sion of which I write, the nature of the country prohibite
fire signals from being seen except from very short dis
tances, and runners were hurried through the district
bearing torches, which would indicate that the aid of al
within sight was required. In fine, it was the "speed
Malise, speed," of the Apache. This explanation will
account for what followed.

Between three and four o'clock A. M., just after the lights had disappeared, the sound of horses advancing at a fast gallop was heard approaching the station. The sentinel challenged, and was immediately answered with the round Saxon response, "Friends." It proved to be two of my own company, who had been sent back by Capt. Roberts with the information that there was abundance of water at Dragoon Springs, and instruction to join him with the train without delay. The poor fellows had ridden twenty-eight miles through that terrible storm, and in the heart of a country swarming with hostile and ever vigilant savages. Two days subsequently they had a splendid opportunity to test their gallantry, and most nobly did they respond to the appeal. In obedience to order, we set forward before daylight to join Captain Roberts, and reached Dragoon Springs, without incident, at three o'clock P. M. A long and fatiguing march

of forty miles had to be made be
Pass, where the next water was t
were in doubt as to the quantity,
that I should remain at Dragoo
morning, while Capt. Roberts wa
his infantry and seven of my comp
under my charge. At half-past fi
out, and the strictest vigilance wa
the whole night. By daylight n
again in the saddle, and the train
for the long and dreary march.
cumbered with wagons my cavalry
distance easily in seven hours; b
to keep pace with those indispensa
ammunition, clothing and medicin
we arrived at Ewell's Station, fift
pass, and I determined to park t
had almost given out, and were q
plish the remainder of the mar
Just as I had come to this conclu
eral riders coming toward us wi
soon proved to be the detachmen
had been detailed to act with C
them were mounted behind two c
dently ridden hard. Sergeant Mi
saluting, said: "Capt. Roberts
Apache Pass by a very large b
fought them for six hours, and f
to run. Capt. Roberts then dir
through the pass, and report to y
the train and take every precaut
will join you to-night. On lea
pursued by over fifty well armed
and we lost three horses, killed u

re reaching Apache
be had, and as we
was again agreed
Springs until next
o push ahead with
y, leaving the train
o'clock P. M. he set
maintained in camp
morning we were
ly straightened out
d we not been en-
ould have made the
we were compelled
e transports of food,
A little before dark
n miles west of the
train, as the mules
te unable to accom-
without some rest.
n we perceived sev-
all speed, and they
f my company which
t. Roberts. Two of
ers, and all had evi-
hell approached, and
as been attacked in
y of Indians. We
ally compelled them
ed us to come back
n with orders to park
for its safety. He
g the pass we were
d mounted Apaches,
er us, and that one—

pointing to a splendid gray—is mortally wounde
geant Maynard, now present, has his right arm fr
at the elbow, with a rifle ball, and John Teal we
to be killed, as we saw him cut off by a band of
or twenty savages, while we were unable to rend
any assistance."

The wagons were ordered to be parked; eve
was supplied with ammunition and posted to t
advantage; proper attention was paid to my w
sergeant, and the camp arranged in such a mann
insure a warm reception to a large body of savage
remained on the *qui vive* until one o'clock A. M., w
my extreme surprise and sincere gratification w
joined by John Teal, who was supposed to hav
killed. He brought with him his saddle, blanke
and pistols, having lost his horse and spurs. His
tive is so full of interest, and so well illustrates s
in Apache character, that it is worth recording.

"Soon after we left the pass," said he, "we
upon a sort of hollow plain or vale, about a mile
across which we dashed with speed. I was abo
hundred yards in the rear, and presently a body of
fifteen Indians got between me and my companio
turned my horse's head southward and coursed alo
plain, lengthwise, in the hope of outrunning the
my horse had been too sorely tested, and could n
away. They came up and commenced firing, o
passing through the body of my horse, just forw
his hind quarters. It was then about dark, and I
diately dismounted, determined to fight it out to t
ter end. My horse fell, and as I approached hi
began to lick my hands. I then swore to kill a
one Apache. Lying down behind the body of my
animal, I opened fire upon them with my carbine,

being a breech-loader, enabled m
fusillade. This repeated fire seen
ages, and instead of advancing w
menced to circle round me, firing
direction. They knew that I also
a sabre, and seemed unwilling to
this way the fight continued for
got a good chance at a prominent
carbine ball into his breast. He
of some note, because soon after t
away from me, and I could hea
fainter in the distance. I though
make tracks, and divesting myse
the saddle, bridle and blanket fr
started for camp. I have walked

It is needless to add how gratif
brave and loyal soldier again, a
wound or scar. We subsequent
man he shot was no less an indivi
Mangas Colorado, but, I regret
vived his wound to cause us mor

About an hour after Teal ha
by Capt. Roberts with thirty m
description of the fight. I omit
twelve-pounder mountain howit
force, and to these guns the vi
utable. It seems that about on
forty miners had located them
gold mines, or the same mines
portion of this work as the scen
family were attacked and the
Apaches, and also where Delga
Wells. This was the great str
his band, and finding himself u

e to keep up a lively
ned to confuse the sav-
vith a rush, they com-
occasional shots in my
had a six-shooter and
try close quarters. In
over an hour, when I
Indian and slipped a
must have been a man
that they seemed to get
r their voices growing
ht this a good time to
elf of my spurs, I took
rom my dead horse and
eight miles since then."
fied I was to receive this
and find him free from
tly ascertained that the
dual than the celebrated
to add, the rascal sur-
e trouble.
d come in, I was joined
nen, and then got a full
ted to mention that two
gers were with our little
ictory is probably attrib-
e hundred and thirty or
selves at the Pino Alto
mentioned in a former
e where Mr. Hay and his
ir cattle stolen by the
dito got badly scored by
ronghold of Mangas and
nable to dislodge the un-

welcome intruders without help, he had disp
sengers to Cheis, the principal warrior of th
Apaches, to assist him in expelling the mi
was too much occupied by the advancing
American troops to give heed to this call, a
attend. Such want of faith was inexplicable
who knew nothing of our approach, and at
two hundred warriors he visited Cheis, to
reason for his apparent defection from the A
In reply Cheis took Mangas to the top of th
and showed him the dust made by our adv
and told him that it was his first duty to def
and that if Mangas would join in the affair
whip the "white eyes," and make themselve
the spoil. This arrangement was immediat
by Mangas, and their united forces, amounti
seven hundred warriors, so disposed as to t
by surprise and insure his defeat. But "t
plans of men and mice, aft gang aglee," and
fixed schemes were doomed to be terribly o

Roberts, entirely unsuspecting any attack,
pass with the ordinary precautions. He ha
two-thirds of the way, when from both s
battlemented gorge a fearful rain of fire a
poured upon his troops, within a range of
to eighty yards. On either hand the rocks
ural and almost unassailable defenses. Ev
cealed an armed warrior, and each warrior
rifle, six-shooter and knife. A better arme
scarcely be imagined. From behind ever
shelter came the angry and hissing missile
soul to be seen. Quickly, vigorously, and
his men respond, but to what effect? Th
pending ammunition to no purpose; their f

visible; there was no way to
natural fortresses; the how
men doubtful how to attac
Roberts determined to fall
contest. The orders were
fect discipline. Reaching t
troops were reorganized, sl
over the hills so as to comm
were loaded, and belched
found necessary. In this
marched forward. Water w
tinuance of life. Unless th
they must perish. A mar
Arizonian sun, and over wi
blinding dust and thirst-pr
been effected, and it would
again without serious loss o
without taking into accou
being defeated by seven ti
What would it avail those
Indians were as well armed
all the advantages; that th
to one, when the outside an
ready to taunt them with
specious reasons why they
savages?

Forward, steadily forwa
galling fire, did those gall
they reached the old station
hundred yards from the spr
stone, and afforded ample
water, and eighteen hours,
including six hours of sha
without a drop. Men and

to escalade those impregnable
witzers were useless, and the
ack the foe. In such strait,
l back, reform and renew the
e given and obeyed with per-
the entrance to the pass the
skirmishers were thrown out
mand the road; the howitzers
d forth their shells whenever
is manner the troops again
was indispensable for the con-
they could reach the springs
arch of forty miles under an
ide alkaline plains, with their
provoking effects, had already
d be impossible to march back
of life, and untold suffering,
ount the seeming disgrace of
times their force of Apaches.
brave men to know that the
ed as they; that they possessed
they outnumbered them seven
and carping world would be so
defeat, and adduce so many
y should have annihilated the

ard, under a continuous and
llant companies advance until
ion house in the pass, about six
prings. The house was built of
e shelter; but still they had no
s, with a march of forty miles,
arp fighting, had been passed
d officers were faint, worn-out

---

with fatigue, want of sleep, and inte
excitement; still Roberts urged them
way. His person was always the m
voice ever cheering and encouraging.
manding the springs are two hills, b
cult of ascent. One is to the east, a
looks them from the south. On these h
had built rude but efficient breastwork
one upon the other so as to form cren
the interstices. From these fortificati
rapid and scathing fire, which could
with effect by musketry from three to
below. The howitzers were got into
of them was so badly managed that
brought immediately under the fire f
out being able to make even a decen
few moments it was overturned by so
piece of stupidity, and the artillerist
sharp fire of the savages. At that j
Mitchell with his six associates of my
rush to bring off the howitzer and p
position. Upon reaching the guns, th
to turn it down hill, but up, so as to k
the fire. While performing this gall
assailed with a storm of balls, but es
after having righted the gun, brou
placed it in a position best calculated
ive service. So soon as this feat ha
complished, the exact range was obtai
shell hurled upon the hills, burstin
should. The Apaches, wholly unused
ble engines, precipitately abandoned
and fled in all directions. It was ne
main under those death-dealing height

when camp-fires would afford the enemy the best kind of advantage, was not true policy, and Capt. Roberts ordered each man to take a drink from the precious and hardly-earned springs, and fill his canteen, after which the troops retired within the shelter afforded by the stone station house, the proper guards and pickets being posted.

In this fight Roberts had two men killed and three wounded, and I afterwards learned from a prominent Apache who was present in the engagement, that sixty-three warriors were killed outright by the shells, while only three perished from musketry fire. He added—"We would have done well enough if you had not fired wagons at us." The howitzers being on wheels, were deemed a species of wagon by the Apaches, wholly inexperienced in that sort of warfare.

Capt. Roberts suffered his men to recruit their wasted energies with supper, and then taking one-half his company, the remainder being left under command of Lieut. Thompson, marched back to Ewell's Station, fifteen miles, to assure the safety of the train under my command, and escort it through the pass. As before stated, he reached my camp a little after two o'clock A.M., where the men rested until five, when the march toward the pass was resumed. Several alarms were given before his arrival, and we heard the Apaches careering around us; but they made no attack, and kept out of sight. At five o'clock A.M., the train was straightened out with half my effective cavalry force three hundred yards in the advance, and the other half about as far in the rear, while the wagons were flanked on either side by the infantry. In this order we entered that most formidable of gorges, when the bugles blew a halt. A considerable body of the infantry were then thrown out on either side as skirmishers, with a small reserve as the rallying point, while the cavalry were ordered to guard the train, and make occasional dashes into the side cañons. "Up hill and down dale" went the skirmishers, plunging into dark and forbidding defiles, and climbing steep, rocky and difficult acclivities, while the cavalry made frequent sorties from the main body to the distance of several hundred yards. Being without a subaltern, Gen. Carleton had assigned Lieut. Muller, of the First Cavalry California Volunteers, to service with my command. This officer soon after gave sufficient proof of his gallantry and zeal, for which I now gratefully return thanks.

In this manner we progressed through that great stronghold of the Apaches and dangerous defile, until we joined the detachment under Lieut. Thompson, at the stone station house, where we quartered for the remainder of that day. Let it be borne in mind that Capt. Roberts' company of Californian Infantry had marched forty miles without food or water, had fought for six hours with desperation against six times their numbers of splendidly armed Apaches, ensconced behind their own natural ramparts, and with every possible advantage in their favor; had driven that force before them, occupied their defiles, taken their strongholds, and, after only one draught of water and a hasty meal, had made another march of thirty miles, almost absolutely without rest. I doubt much if any record exists to show where infantry have made a march of seventy miles, fought one terrible battle of six hours' duration, and achieved a decided victory under such circumstances.

The shrill fife, the rattling drum and the mellow bugles sounded the reveille before dawn of the next day. The camp-fires were soon throwing up their lively jets of flame and smoke, while the grateful odors of frying bacon and browning flap-jacks saluted the appreciat nostrils of the hungry troops. But we had no wat and without water we could have no coffee, that m coveted of all rations. There was reason to believe t the Apaches intended to put our metal to another tri They had again occupied the heights above the sprin and also the water sources, which were thickly shelte by trees and willow underbrush. Roberts again m preparations to dislodge the savages, and ordered howitzers into the most favorable positions. Just t I saluted him, and said, "Captain, you have done y share of this fight; I now respectfully ask for my chan If you will throw your shells on the heights above springs, I will charge the latter with my men, and cl out the Apaches in a very few moments. I certai think this concession due me."

Roberts reflected a few moments, and replied—"I truly sorry that your wish cannot be granted. Your the only cavalry I have, and their safety is indispens to ours. We are going to the San Simon river, whe am ordered to establish a depot and await the arriva other troops with supplies. You are to take back train for those supplies, and you will have enough to in your proper turn. I cannot, under the circumstanc grant your request."

To this I replied: "Your objections appear cog but I cannot perceive why all these things cannot be complished, and still permit my men, who are burn with anxiety, to charge those springs and disperse wretched horde of savages. They are already cow and will immediately flee before a vigorous assault."

Capt. Roberts replied: "You have had my ansv Captain, and it should be enough. I do not intend jeopard my own men, but will shell the heights springs, and effect a bloodless victory, in so far as we are concerned."

After this rebuff I could make no further personal appeal, but instructed Lieut. Muller to beseech Capt. Roberts, and, if possible, induce him to change his mind. Muller argued for half an hour, until Roberts told him either to obey or be placed under arrest. This ended the colloquy. The howitzers then opened fire—the shells burst splendidly; large numbers of Apaches were observed to decamp from the heights in the most hurried manner; the springs also underwent a similar cleaning, and in less than twenty minutes the troops were permitted to advance and fill their canteens, while my cavalry, without waiting further orders, made a rush after the retreating savages until the rapid rise and terribly broken nature of the ground checked their career. The hillsides were covered with fleeing Apaches, who seemed imbued with supernatural powers of locomotion. Upwards they sped with the celerity of Alpine goats, until they disappeared behind the crests of tall mountains and rugged hills. In peace and quiet we partook of the precious fountain. Our horses and mules, which had not tasted water for forty-eight hours, and were nearly famished from so dusty a road and so long a journey under the hottest of suns, drank as if they would never be satisfied. An hour later we moved through the pass, entered upon the wide plain which separates it from the San Simon river, and reached our camp on that creek, without further trouble, about four o'clock P. M.

CHAPTER XIV.

Return from the San Simon.—Avoid Apache Pass.—Reasons for so D
Marching.—Apaches show Themselves.—Rattlesnakes.—O
manes.—San Pedro Again.—Return through Apache Pass.—
Dead Americans.—Mangas Colorado's Deceit.—How the A
Killed.—Apache Cunning and Calculation.—Bury the Dead.—
was Cured of his Wound.—Death of Mangas Colorado.—Th
Abilities of Mangas.—Apache Democracy.—Extent of th
Mangas Colorado.

But short breathing space was afforded me s
Simon. On the morning of the third day aft
rival, and the trying tests to which we had
jected, I received orders from Capt. Roberts
the train of twenty-six wagons back to the S
in order to furnish the required transportatio
provision, ammunition, clothing and other s
the column. For this duty I was assigned fo
my troopers, and seven men of Roberts' comp
intervening country had been well examine
fine field glasses, and on two occasions a tho
connissance had been made by the cavalry, whi
that a very excellent passage existed to the no
Chiricahui range, over nearly a level plain, an
distance would be only some seven miles lon
route, with the approbation of Capt. Rober
once selected for our return, and for the foll
sons: The safety of our train was of the very fi
ance, as upon it depended the success of the
dented march the "Column from California"
attempting. In the next place, if the Apaches

us such a strong and determined fight when we mustered one hundred and twenty-nine men and two mountain howitzers, what great chance would I have of safely conducting a train of twenty-six wagons with only twenty-one men, and without artillery, through such a terrific stronghold? In the third place, nature provided a passage nearly as short, much less laborious for men and animals, well supplied with water, wood and grass, and by its open character, affording the very best field for the operations of cavalry, and the widest range for our splendid breech-loading weapons of long reach. It was not a question whether we should again fight the Indians, but whether we could forward the main object of the expedition. Indeed, strict orders had been given to refrain from Indian broils as much as possible, to suffer some wrong rather than divert our time and attention from the great purpose contemplated, which was to liberate Arizona from Confederate rule and effect a junction with Gen. Canby as soon as possible. Had we been exclusively on an Indian campaign, other means would have been adopted.

Having taken a final survey, I started in the evening just after sundown, to prevent the Apaches from seeing the dust raised by the column, and directed our course over the open plain, north of the Chiricahui range, and between it and the mountains from which it is divided some four miles by an open and elevated piece of clear land, without trees or rocks, and thickly covered with the finest grama grass. We traveled all night with the cavalry covering the front and rear, and the seven infantrymen sleeping in the empty wagons, with their weapons loaded and ready at a moment's warning. Every little while the cavalry were required to patrol the length of the column, to ward off any sudden and unforeseen

attack. The infantry were allowed to slee
that they might be fresh to keep guard thr
day. In this manner we progressed until fi
day, when I ordered a halt, had the wagons
corralled nearly in a circle, with the animals
inside, except the guard, and the camp p
pared against surprise. We were then exa
the Chiricahui mountains, and south of an
each being about two miles distant. I cou
see large numbers of Apaches riding furio
down the steeps of those heights, and someti
ing on the plain, as if to attack. But exp
taught them that our carbines and Minni
deadly at nearly a mile of distance, and the
proach within their reach. Our horses wer
picket rope which extended across the ope
corral, and covered by a sufficient guard.
the Apaches did not care to make an onslau
alry and teamsters, all of whom were wel
tired to rest, after partaking of a hearty
evening, at dark, we again hitched up and
journey as before. I was in the advance wi
Loring, when our horses suddenly jumped
our ears were greeted by the spiteful warnin
snake, coiled up directly in our path. To a
lignant reptile the train diverged about t
from the road, and after a little while ente
This sort of thing occurred many times duri
until we again struck the regular highwa
west of Apache Pass. Our next halt was m
from Ewell's Station, and we had come sev
two nights. That day we saw no Indians,
same precautions were adopted as if we wer
by large numbers. Our next march was t

los Hermanos, or the "Brothers' Springs," so as to avoi stopping to water at Dragoon Springs, which were tw miles up a deep and dangerous cañon, where the enem would possess every possible advantage, and where th animals would have to be led to water a mile or mor from the wagons, with the delightful prospect of no finding anything like a sufficiency.

In due course of time, we regained the San Pedr river, where Gen. Carleton had arrived with a conside able body of troops. I turned over my train, and wa ordered to advance once more with head-quarter Apache Pass was again entered and traversed; but seemed as if no Indian had ever awakened its echoe with his war-whoop—as if it had ever been the abode o peace and silence. I rode beside Dr. McNulty for while, and described to him the terrible conflict whic had taken place there only eight days previous. Th true soldier and soldiers' friend frequently exclaimed- "By George, I wish I had been here!" "What splendi natural breastworks are these, old fellow!"—a peculi expression of his—"I am glad you came out of it a right!" Next day we emerged from the pass witho molestation, or seeing an Indian sign; but, instead directing our course toward the San Simon, diverged b another route toward the Cienega, a flat, marshy plac at the foot of the next easterly range of mountains, which Stein's Peak is the most prominent. The Sa Simon creek, as it is called, sinks about a mile south the station bearing that name, and undoubtedly fu nishes the supply of water which is to be had at th Cienega, located on the same plain, and about eig miles south of the spot where the creek disappears.

We had progressed about two miles beyond the pa when we suddenly came upon the bodies of thirte

persons, pierced in many places wi
holes, and some with the arrows s
deeply into their frames. After sor
verdict was that they were the bodies
by the Apaches but a short time be
sion proved correct, as was afterward
all doubt, and as their destruction w
trick peculiarly illustrative of Apac
relate it *in extenso*.

My readers will bear in mind the
Santa Rita del Cobre, where the Bo
remained for several months, where
the two Mexican boys were rescued f
Delgadito made his attack upon Mr
got handsomely seamed by Wells
worked by Mr. Hay at that period, tw
proved to be very rich, and attracte
turers, among whom were a number
fighters, who had passed years upo
were universally dreaded by all the
Arizona and New Mexico. In a sh
population at that point amounted t
hundred, of whom one hundred
armed, fearless and experienced m
such a party was far from pleasing
and his band, as they claimed exc
to that whole region, which was
They also regarded the miners as t
sors of the Boundary Commission,
parted in deadly enmity after a sho
friendship. Mangas made many s
lodge the miners, and divert thei
Copper Mines, but without effect.
some of the more prominent amon

th bullet and arrow
ill sticking, driven
he examination, the
of white men killed
fore. This conclu-
ascertained beyond
was compassed by a
he character, I will

place described as
undary Commission
Inez Gonzales and
rom captivity, where
Hay, and where he
. The gold mines
welve years prior, had
d many bold adven-
of celebrated Indian
n our frontiers, and
wild Indian tribes of
ort time the mining
o something like two
and fifty were well
en. The presence of
to Mangas Colorado
lusive proprietorship
their main fastness.
he legitimate succes-
with whom they had
t season of simulated
killful efforts to dis-
r attention from the
He privately visited
g them, and profess-

ing the most disinterested friendship, offered to
them where gold was far more abundant and cou
obtained with less labor, accompanying his pro
with something like the following style of inducem

"You good man. You stay here long time and
hurt Apache. You want the 'yellow iron;' I know
plenty is. Suppose you go with me, I show you
tell no one else. Mangas your friend, he want to d
good. You like 'yellow iron'—good! Me no
'yellow iron.' Him no good for me—can no eat, c
drink, can no keepee out cold. Come, I show you

For a while each person so approached kept thi
to himself, but after a time they began to compare
and found that Mangas had made like promises to
under the ban of secrecy and the pretense of exc
personal friendship. Those who at first believed t
rascal, at once comprehended that it was a trap
separate and sacrifice the bolder and leading m
gaining their confidence and killing them in detail,
their fates would remain unknown to those left b
The next time, after this *éclaircissement*, that M
visited that camp, he was tied to a tree and admini
a dose of "strap oil," well applied by lusty arms
vengeance was more keenly aroused by this de
treatment, and from that time forth every sort of
ance was put into operation against the miners.
were shot at from the cover of trees and rocks, the
tle and horses were driven off, their supply trains
and destroyed, and themselves reduced to want
Mangas desired their utter extirpation. He wante
blood; he was anxious for their annihilation, and
himself unable to cope with them single hand
dispatched emissaries to Cheis, the most famed
of the Chiricahui tribe, to come and help him ou
Americans.

Just at that time news was r
Americans were advancing fr
about to overrun his country
home," was the motto of that
instead of going to the relief o
the newly threatened invasion,
promising to help Mangas, in h
accepted, and Mangas joined
with two hundred warriors,
large force against which Robe
formidable gorge.

While these united forces
Pass, waiting our arrival, they
Americans approaching from
plain intervening between tha
and determined to cut it off.
recognized in the new-comers
party of the hardy and expe
Santa Rita del Cobre, and kn
ways on their guard and prep
with the greatest courage and
knew that they would be spe
having entered the pass, and
would probably result in the l
riors. How to compass their
possibility, became the chief
Two miles east of the pass, ri
structed plain, there is a gull
of heavy rains through a poro
gully is from six to eight feet
long, three or four yards wide
horseback until the rider is wi
With consummate cunning a
ensconced themselves in thi

ceived by Cheis that the
m the west, and were
"'Charity begins at
prominent Apache, and,
Mangas, notified him of
nd asked his assistance,
turn. The proffer was
heis at the Apache Pass
which accounts for the
s had to contend in that

were occupying Apache
descried a small band of
e east, across the wide
place and the Cienega,
hose wily Indians soon
small, but well armed,
ienced miners from the
that such men were al-
red to defend their lives
etermination. They also
ially on the *qui vive* after
at any attack upon them
s of several of their war-
nds and obviate this last
jects of their attention.
t in the clear and unob-
formed by the washing
s and yielding soil. This
deep, a quarter of a mile
and cannot be seen from
in fifty yards of the spot.
rge body of the Apaches
gully, knowing that the

travelers would be somewhat off their guard i
plain, apparently without place of conceal
awaited the approach of their victims. Th
proved eminently successful. Wholly unap
of a danger they could not see and had no reas
pect, the hardy miners rode forward with t
resting in the slings across their saddle bows,
tols in scabbards, and their whole attention a
the pass they were about to enter. When th
rived within forty yards of the gully or ditch
and simultaneous fire was opened upon them b
cealed Indians, which killed one-half their nu
right, and sent the remainder wounded a
stricken to seek safety in flight. They were im
pursued and massacred to a man. Theirs
bodies discovered by us soon after emerging fr
Pass, and although we grieved over their deat
men grieve for each other, the circumstance
another and most instructive lesson in Apache
and the wondrously shrewd calculations mad
people when determined to effect a desired ob

I subsequently learned that the victims had
a considerable sum in gold dust, nearly fifty
dollars' worth, all of which fell into the han
slayers, who had become well acquainted wit
Their bodies were as decently interred as circ
would permit, after which we moved forward
Cienega, in mournful and somewhat vindictiv

Mangas Colorado returned with his dimin
to the Pino Alto country after his disastrou
Apache Pass, but he returned with a carbine
chest, fired by John Teal, whose gallant cond
ready been described. It was owing to this c
that the Apaches abandoned their attack up

order to give succor to
He was carefully conveye
he received the enforced
physician, who happened
It was a case of the pra
circumstances. If the p
he would return to his n
fearful devastations; but
the inhabitants were ass
land with him. The ba
ered, and the people w
lease of life, for he was s
E. D. Shirland, of the
alry, and killed while
from the guard house.
Colorado, the greatest a
of the nineteenth centu
ful man. His sagaciou
character of wide and e
of any other Indian of
comprehensive intellect
principal tribes of Ariz
mon cause. He found
gether, for weeks at a ti
as none of his predece
He quieted and allayed
between different bran
and taught them to co
collective strength. Al
sonal prowess and cou
qualities in others, and
Crafty and skilled in h
devised schemes remar
ception and success in

o prominent a man as Mangas.
l to Janos, in Chihuahua, where
attendance and aid of a Mexican
to be in that place at the time.
ctice of surgery under unique
atient survived, well and good;
ative wilds to again renew his
if he died, the doctor and all
ured they should visit the spirit
l was extracted, Mangas recov-
ere saved; but his was a short
oon afterward captured by Capt.
First California Volunteer Cav-
attempting to effect his escape
In this manner perished Mangas
nd most talented Apache Indian
y. In truth, he was a wonder-
s counsels partook more of the
larged statesmanship than those
modern times. His subtle and
enrolled and united the three
na and New Mexico in one com-
means to collect and keep to-
me, large bodies of savages, such
essors could assemble and feed.
all jealousies and disagreements
hes of the great Apache family,
nprehend the value of unity and
though never remarkable for per-
age, he knew how to evoke those
appropriate the credit to himself.
uman nature, he laid plans and
kable for their shrewdness of con-
execution. In council he was the

last to speak, in action he was the last t
field, and the first to leave if defeated;
reputation among all his people of being
bravest. That he was the wisest has nev
that he was the bravest has never been
take him for all in all, he exercised an
equaled by any savage of our time, whe
consideration the fact that the Apaches
chiefs, and obey no orders from any sour
stitute a pure democracy, in which ev
equal of every other. Each is sovereign
as a warrior, and disclaims all allegiance.
ject will be treated at length in another
work.

The life of Mangas Colorado, if it could
would be a tissue of the most extensiv
revelations, the most atrocious crueltie
dictive revenges, and widespread injurie
ted by an American Indian. We read
of horror the dreadful massacre at Sc
bloody deeds at Wyoming, the cruelt
savage allies, and others of like characte
into absolute insignificance beside the
Colorado, running through a series of
Mangas was fully seventy when sent to
The northern portions of Chihuahua an
tracts of Durango, the whole of Arizona
siderable part of New Mexico, were laid
destroyed by this man and his follow
country twice as large as all California
most houseless, unproductive, uninhabit
and uncompromising hostility. Large
towns were depopulated and ruined. V
as that of Barbacomori and San Bernar

ing with wealth and immense herds of cattle, horses and mules, were turned into waste places, and restored to their pristine solitudes. The name of Mangas Colorado was the tocsin of terror and dismay throughout a vast region of country, whose inhabitants existed by his sufferance under penalty of supplying him with the requisite arms and ammunition for his many and terrible raids. He combined many attributes of real greatness with the ferocity and brutality of the most savage savage. The names of his victims, by actual slaughter or by captivity, would fill a volume, and the relation of his deeds throughout a long and merciless life would put to shame the records of the "Newgate Calendar." I dismiss him with disgust and loathing, not unmingled with some degree of respect for his abilities.

CHAPTER XV.

Apache Signals.—Mode of Marching through Arizona and New Mexico.—Apache Watchfulness and Caution.—The Gila Country.—Grama Grass.—The Information Indispensable for a Successful Campaign against Apaches.—The Smoke Columns.—Pressed Grass.—Bent and Broken Twigs.—Blazed Trees.—Mounted Parties.—The Stone Signals.—Kit Carson.—Comparison between White Men's and Apache Philosophy.—The Present Condition of Apache Armament.—Their Knowledge of Colors, and the Use they make of It.—Their Hatred of all Other Races.—Proofs of their Good Breeding.—Our Indian Policy Discussed.—Apache Want of Sympathy.—How they Obtain their Guns and Ammunition.—Extent of their Ravages in Northern Mexico.—Monuments of Apache Massacres in Arizona.—Mines of Arizona.

The experiences of several years had not been ignored. The time which had elapsed between my first and second appearance upon the stage of Indian action had given me opportunity to reflect upon many events, and study their causes, characters, and mechanism of production. Reposing in the midst of civilized security, and altogether freed from the excitement of unseen, deadly perils to which life in the Apache countries is invariably subject, I was enabled to draw more correct conclusions than could have been arrived at on the ground, while compelled to regard personal safety as the first necessity. In this calm and undisturbed survey of the field many circumstances were accounted for which at the time appeared more the result of untoward accident than of well laid schemes founded upon a shrewd knowledge of natural instincts. The pyramidal columns of smoke, so often seen to ascend from mountain heights, had appeared to me as merely warnings of our presence in the

country; the apparently casual turning over of a sto
close to the highway, never attracted attention;
breaking of a few insignificant branches in a fo
did not seem to be more than accidental occurren
but closer investigation led me to believe that all t
things, and many more, had their peculiar significa
that they were neither more nor less than lithogra
notices by which one party could know the force of
other—the direction taken—the extent and nature o
danger which threatened, and impart the summons
a gathering. That these surmises were correct every
Indian fighter knows; but the responsibilities of my
sition determined me to make a study of points so es
tial to a successful campaign, and the safety of my
mand. Nevertheless, it will be found that a party,
though it be a small one, which is well armed; w
never relaxes its vigilance; which selects clear,
ground for camping; which invariably throws out a
vanced guard, and keeps its weapons always ready
use at a moment's warning, can move with safety thr
all portions of Arizona and New Mexico; while ten t
their number, disregarding these precautions, are
to be attacked, and if attacked about as certain t
defeated with loss. Let it be again distinctly impr
upon my readers, that the Apache never attacks u
fully convinced of an easy victory. They will watc
days, scanning your every movement, observing
every act; taking exact note of your party and a
belongings. Let no one suppose that these assault
made upon the spur of the moment by bands accide
encountered. Far from it; they are almost invar
the results of long watching—patient waiting—c
and rigorous observation, and anxious counsel.

Throughout nearly the whole of Arizona the tr encounters a succession of high mountain ridges, running northwest and southeast, overlooking intermediate, unwooded and unconcealed plains, which are from fifteen to forty miles from ridge to ridge. The sierras are not continuous or united, but occur in isolated ranges of from twenty to fifty miles in extent, with smooth and clear prairie lands between them. These intervals extend from one to five miles; but as they afford neither wood nor water, are never traveled except by very small parties, which can move quickly and are too weak to risk the dangerous mountain passes and cañons. But even this cannot be effected in some places without making a detour of many miles from the direct road, and it is often indispensable to run all risks rather than lose time, or suffer the inconveniences of such a round-about and wretchedly provided march, where one is likely to perish from the want of water.

The land along the Gila is excessively alkaline and unproductive in its present condition, although in many places the willow, cotton-wood and mesquit flourish luxuriantly. In wet weather the soil becomes a soft, deep and tenacious muck, which almost wholly impedes wagon travel, and during the dry season the roads are so deeply covered with a fine, almost impassable and light dust, that every footfall throws up clouds of it yards above the traveler's head, completely shutting out from sight all objects more than three yards distant. To such an extent does this prevail in some localities, that I have been unable to distinguish the man or his horse at my side, and within reach of my arm, on a fine moonlight night.

In the immediate neighborhood of Tucson, on the table land outside of its cultivated fields, the traveler, for the first time, meets with the far-famed grama grass, but on descending from this *mesa* does not again come in

contact with it until he reaches Dragoon Sprin
grama grass is beyond all comparison the most
herbage ever cropped by quadrupeds. It is m
ier, contains more saccharine in connection
farinaceous and strength-giving aliment than
grass known. At least such is my experience,
of all other men who have had occasion to test
and time to pronounce upon its merits. I g
very first rank among all sorts of hay, belie
be superior to clover, timothy, alfalfa, or all
gether. Although I have never been able to o
seed upon this grass, it seems to combine th
of grain and hay in the greatest perfection.
live and do well upon it, provided they can
regularly, while doing active cavalry duty, wit
feed; but they must have it, as stated, re
abundance, and be permitted to crop it from
tures. It bears no flower, exhibits no seed, b
reproduce itself from the roots by the shoo
young, green and vigorous spires, which are
closed within the sheaths of their old and dr
decessors, and by their growth split and ca
earth, and occupy their places.

I am not sufficiently versed in botany to gi
ers a more elaborate and scientific account of
grass, and if I were, it would not be my desi
of this character to inflict upon the general
ries of double-barreled Greek terms which
thousand could understand, and, understand
care about. The object is to convey some to
of that great aliment for herbivorous animals
the Apache races rely for the support of t
and which, by its singularly strength-giving
is capable of enabling their ponies to perfor
nary feats of endurance.

gs. This
nutricious
uch heav-
vith more
any other
and that
its virtues
ive it the
ving it to
three-to-
oserve any
qualities
Iorses will
obtain it
hout other
gularly in
native pas-
it seems to
ing up of
at first in-
ed-up pre-
t them to

e my read-
this superb
e in a work
eader a se-
ot one in a
ing, would
erable idea
upon which
eir horses,
properties,
extraordi-

From Dragoon Pass eastward the whole of the vast region inhabited by the Apaches is covered with this species of grass, which is more or less thick and nourishing, according to circumstances, but always in sufficient abundance to afford all the nutriment required. It is this plentiful distribution of the most strengthening grass in the world which enables the Apache to maintain his herds, make his extraordinary marches, and inflict wide-spread depredations.

A knowledge of signals, whether smokes or fires, or bent twigs and pressed grass, or of turned stones, together with the localities of water sources, the different passes through the sierras, the nature and quantity of the fodder to be had in certain districts, the capacity to distinguish tracks and state with certainty by whom made, and how long before, are absolutely indispensable to a successful campaign among those savages. To the acquirement of all these points I devoted much attention, and, without egotism, can claim such success as to privilege me in giving the result of my researches as worthy of confidence.

Smokes are of various kinds, each one significant of a particular object. A sudden puff, rising into a graceful column from the mountain heights, and almost as suddenly losing its identity by dissolving into the rarified atmosphere of those heights, simply indicates the presence of a strange party upon the plains below; but if those columns are rapidly multiplied and repeated, they serve as a warning to show that the travelers are well armed and numerous. If a steady smoke is maintained for some time, the object is to collect the scattered bands of savages at some designated point, with hostile intention, should it be practicable. These signals[*] are made at night, in the same order, by the use of fires, which

being kindled, are either alternately
shrouded from view, or suffered to burn st
casion may require. All travelers in Arizo
Mexico are acquainted with the fact that if
pressed down in a certain direction during
son, it will retain the impress and grow d
more yellow until the rainy season imparts
restores it to pristine vigor and greenness.
are so well versed in this style of signali
can tell you, by the appearance of the gra
days have elapsed since it was trodden
the party consisted of Indians or whites, ab
there were, and, if Indians, to what partic
belonged. In order to define these poin
some well marked footstep, for which th
avidity, and gently pressing down the tro
as not to disturb surrounding herbage, t
fully examine the print. The differenc
crushing heel of a white man's boot or
light imprint left by an Indian's moccas
ing to admit of doubt, while the different
casin used by the several divisions of the
are well known among them. The ti
elapsed since the passage of the party is
discoloration of the herbage and breaking
to ascertain the approximate amount of n
left in the crushed grass. Numbers ar
the multiplicity of tracks. Signalizing
broken branches and blazed trees, is too
deserve special mention here. In the
Apaches do not differ from other India
continent.

If a mounted party has been on the r
bers, quality and time of passage are d

exactitude, as well as the precise sex and species of the animals ridden. The moment such a trail is fallen in with, they follow it eagerly, having nothing else to do, until they find some of the dung, which is immediately broken open, and from its moisture and other properties, the date of travel is arrived at nearly to a certainty, while the constituents almost invariably declare the region from which the party came. This last point depends upon whether the dung is composed of grama grass, barley and grass, corn, bunch grass, buffalo grass, sacaton, or any of the well known grasses of the country, for as they are chiefly produced in different districts, the fact of their presence in the dung shows precisely from what district the animal last came. When barley is discovered the Apaches have reason to believe that Americans have been over the route, and when maize is found they feel confident that the travelers were either Mexicans or people from that country. These remarks apply only to unshod horses, for iron prints speak for themselves. The difference in sexes is easily told by the attitude each assumes while urinating—the male stretching himself and ejecting his urine forward of his hind feet, while the female ejects to the rear of the hind prints.

Signalizing by stones is much more difficult to comprehend, and very few have ever arrived at even a distant knowledge of this art. Perhaps the most skillful detecter of such notices was "Kit Carson," as he was generally termed, and it would be very strange if he were not. No man in the United States has had greater experience, and no man possessed a keener natural instinct to detect Indian signs. I must confess my inability to do this part of the subject full justice, but will give the result of my observations. The traveler is often surprised to notice a number of stones on one side the

road; lying apparently without any
when he can observe no others withi
A careful observation will convince h
grew in that region, but were brough
erable distance. This translation w
the work of Americans nor Mexica
and evidently for some fixed purpos
ination will show that these stone
ranged, and that the majority poi
point of the compass, while the nu
planted them is designated by some
of each stone. For instance, no one
wild countries like Arizona, where d
down during the rainy season, the he
will, in course of time, find itself un
this order is reversed, especially und
above cited, there is good reason to
been purposely done. This belief b
seeing that each one of the group, o
the same way. Besides, a stone w
lying on one particular side, soon
of clay or soil on its nether surface,
has been washed clean. If it be tu
over, the difference becomes easily d
stone be placed on end so as to res
means that the party so placing it r
ance. If turned completely over,
during some raid; and if only partl
pedition has been a failure. Suc
stones being left in a natural positio
but so arranged as to be nearly in
ciently expert in this style of sig
further explanations, and I doubt
Carson" was capable of fully decy
Apache warnings.

ny set arrangement,
in reach of his eye.
him that they never
ht from some consid-
was certainly neither
ans, but of Indians,
ose. A closer exam-
nes are regularly ar-
int to some special
umber of those who
concerted placement
e need be told that in
deluges of rain pour
eaviest side of a stone
nderneath, and when
der the circumstances
o believe that it has
becomes certainty on
or parcel, is precisely
which has been long
contracts a quantity
e, while its upper one
turned over, or partly
discoverable. If one
st against another, it
require aid and assist-
, it indicates disaster
ly turned, that the ex-
ccess is noted by the
n, heaviest side down,
line. I am not suffi-
gnalizing to give any
if any one but "Kit
yphering this kind of

These remarks have seemed necessary to the fu
velopment of the Apache character, as they, in
sort, serve to account for the clear and explicit u
standing which undoubtedly exists among the ma
tached fragments of that race. Without some such
of signals, they would be comparatively incapable
terrible devastations and outrages they have perpet
Neither could they collect their scattered bands fo
occasion requiring numbers without great loss of
and trouble. Having no reliable means for subsis
beyond what they obtain by marauding excursions
are wholly incapable of maintaining any conside
number for more than a few days at a time, and
therefore, depend upon their signals as the mea
warning each other, and consolidating wheneve
"game is worth the candle." The Apaches br
their system to wonderful perfection, and from this
their capacity to act conjointly with celerity, vigo
effect, although the operating bodies may not ac
meet until just before the time for action arrives.
to this system that the Apache bands of fives, tens
twenties, separated from each other by twenty, t
and forty miles, feel that they are operating alwa
concert, and manage to maintain a rigid police es
age over the vast region they inhabit.

When will the white man ever become wise, an
stead of treating the Indian with scornful indiffer
give him credit for his intelligence, his quick and re
able instincts, his powers of reflection and organiz
and his inveterate opposition to all innovation?
have been too much in the habit of treating them
contempt, and underrating our savage enemies.
has been a serious blunder, the rock upon whic
many millions of money and so many precious lives

been wrecked. Is it not time t
their regard? Will civilized peo
are quite as obtuse to comprehe
the Indians to understand thei
not see that their hauteur, self-
ing conceit, are quite as reprehe
norance, distrust and superstiti
donable in his mental darknes
inexcusable in his light. Se
that the Apache of to-day is lik
century ago; that he fights wi
arrows; that he has learned n
that he is a biped brute who is
that he possesses no power of o
judgment, skill, strategy or re
that he possesses them all in ar
the popular mind shall have
heresy, it will have accomplis
that long-wanted result, the do
pacification of the Indian trib
continent.

Let it be well understood th
armed with the best kind of rif
and with knives, and that, in
never without his silent, deat
full of iron-headed arrows.
proved weapons, whenever oc
abandon those of their sires.
fourfold: First, the bow and a
ful warriors proves very deadl
for night attacks or the taking
perior to the gun. Secondly,
can be used in the chase, o
hunt, as half a dozen animals

to accept a new policy in
ople never learn that they
end real Indian nature as
ir civilization? Can they
-sufficiency and overbear-
ensible as the Indian's ig-
tion? The savage is par-
ss, but the white man is
mi-idiotic people believe
ke his ancestor of half a
ith bow and stone-headed
nothing from experience;
s as easily killed as a wolf;
organization, combination,
eflection; but the truth is,
n eminent degree. When
been disabused of such
hed the first step toward
omination and consequent
bes of the North American

hat the Apache of to-day is
fle, with Colt's six-shooters
n addition to these, he is
th-dealing bow and quiver
While adopting our im-
ccasion offers, they never
The reasons for this are
arrow in the hands of skill-
ly; it makes no noise, and
g off of sentinels, is far su-
it is the best weapon that
or, more properly, on the
may be slain in a herd be-

fore their comrades are made aware of the fac
they are so light that they can be worn
slightest sense of encumbrance. Fourthly,
ways be relied on, at close quarters, when ot
fail, or ammunition, of which they possess
plies, gives out. It is, therefore, not stra
Apache will invariably add his bow and a
personal armament, although he may be th
Spencer rifle and a couple of Colt's revolve
munition to suit. Whenever they design e
of our military camps they invariably conc
distance, firearms; so that they may appear
designed enmity or their possession, but sho
serve, they quickly manage to re-possess th
all their weapons.

Let it also be understood that the Apach
fect a knowledge of the assimilation of color
experienced Paris *modiste*. By means of hi
this respect, he can conceal his swart bod
green grass, behind brown shrubs, or gray
so much address and judgment that any bu
enced would pass him by without detectio
tance of three or four yards. Sometimes t
velop themselves in a gray blanket, and b
sprinkling of earth, will so resemble a granit
to be passed within near range without su
others, they will cover their persons with f
ered grass, and lying prostrate, appear as a
tion of the field. Again, they will plant
among the yuccas, and so closely imitate th
of that tree as to pass for one of its species
act imitations of natural objects which are
present to the traveler, tend to disarm susp
would not advise the wayfarer to examine ea

bush, tree or rock, but simply to maintain a cautious system of marching—never, for a moment, relaxing his watchfulness, and invariably keeping his weapons ready for immediate use. Whenever these precautions are observed, the Apache is slow to attack, even at monstrous odds in his favor.

The selfishness inherent in the human race crops out with intensity among these Indians; yet their hatred and animosity toward all other races is even stronger, and is the matrix of the cohesive principle by which they have been kept together, and which has proved their safeguard against all outside corrupting influences. Under no circumstances will one Apache risk anything for another, unless it is manifestly to his interest. The most refined civilization could not advance him in this respect. He appreciates self just as well as those who have been the habitués of Wall street, the Stock Exchange, or the Parisian Boulevards. If the height of good breeding consists in being perfectly impassive, and disregardful of the events which attend on fellow men, then the Apache has arrived at the apex of good breeding, and lordlings may take lessons from his school of manners. Their great natural intelligence makes them comprehend that "in union is strength," and their desire to exhibit that strength is ever prevalent. They delight to manifest their numerical power, for the reason that opportunities for such exhibition are very rare, and whatever is of common occurrence ceases to interest; and also because such combinations tend to inflict additional dread upon their enemies, and the inculcation of this sentiment is a chief cause of security to each Apache.

In all our dealings with Indian tribes we have quite underrated their abilities, and in this we have demonstrated our own stupidity. The vanity and self-conceit of civilized and educated men are never more stilted than when brought in contact with savage races. Such persons are prone to address the Indian with a smirk or patronizing air which is very offensive, and would never be used toward an equal. No allowance is made for the fact that the proud savage does consider himself not only the equal, but the superior of his white brother. It seems never to have been understood that considerable deference should be paid to his very ignorance, because that ignorance is his sufficient excuse for crediting himself with superior intelligence. The conceit of the educated white man is fully equaled by that of the savage, and the lower he is in the scale of mental ability the greater will be his pretension to superiority. The fact that a wise man knows himself to be ignorant, while an ignorant man believes himself to be wise, is fully exemplified in our intercourse with the Apaches, but it is a question in my mind whether the Apaches have not had the best end of the argument, when the character and acts of their agents, and others, who have been appointed to treat with them, are known and considered.

To arrive at a successful arrangement with these Indians they must be approached in the first place as equals. This will flatter their inordinate vanity, and minister to their excessive selfishness. After a few interviews for the purpose of establishing amicable understanding, the agent, or treating party, or traveler, should carefully introduce some cheap natural effects, the employment of which would be ridiculed in ordinary civilized life, but present astounding revelations to the wild Indian. The use of a double convexed lens, as a magnifier, or as a burning-glass; the employment of a strong field glass; exhibiting the powers and qualities of a strong magnet; showing the wonders of the magic lantern, and other

like simple demonstrations, will invariably impre
with something of respect and regard toward th
ator, provided he is exceedingly careful in his
tempts not to alarm their pride and suspicion
boastful or vain expression or demeanor. These
should be done as if with the intention of askin
them an exhibition of their skill in return for you
to please. They should never be permitted to in
they are the results of boastful superiority. In th
ner a feeling of mutual regard can be engendere
is the first step toward the establishment of
amity. They should be asked to exhibit their
in shooting, riding, hunting and other pursuits
character, in which they are expert. The whi
should evince a desire to learn as well as teach;
long as we continue to approach them with haut
with patronizing airs, they will resist our efforts a
ploy all their cunning to overreach and leave u
off than ever. As they cannot rise to our level w
descend to theirs to understand and appreciate th
character.

But even under the most favorable circumstanc
with the employment of every resource within our
only very meagre and unsatisfactory results can
tained. The labors and experiences of two h
and fifty years have failed utterly to create any
able impression upon our Indian races, with the
tion of the Choctaws and Cherokees, who were a
hemmed in by intelligent people, and had civil
forced upon them to some extent, and scarcely
whom is to-day of pure Indian blood. I consid
idea of emancipating our savage tribes from the th
of their ignorance and perverse traditional hatred
whites as wholly utopian. Of all the tribes on o

tinent the Apache is the most impracticable..
enmity toward mankind, and distrust of every wor
act are ineradicable. As their whole system of lif
training is to plunder, murder and deceive, they c
comprehend opposite attributes in others. He
we would denounce as the greatest scoundrel they r
with special esteem and honor. With no people ar
on amicable terms, and never hesitate to rob from
other when it can be done with impunity. There
sympathy among them; the quality is unknown. S
an Apache's horse escape and run past another o
tribe, close enough to catch the animal by simply r
ing forth his hand, that hand will never be stretch
the purpose; but the owner must do the busines
himself, if his squaw is not at hand to do it for
Nevertheless, after a successful raid, in which they
captured many animals, and having selected the be
riding, retire to some remote fastness to feed upo
remainder so long as they last, they will freely sh
the very last bit with any and all comers of their
This seeming hospitality is, however, not the res
kindliness, but the prompting of a selfish polic
they are aware it assists to unite them in one co
band of plundering brotherhood, and to preserve
relations toward each other without which they c
operate advantageously. Frequently when one h
ceived a small present of tobacco, or some such a
he will divide it among all on the spot, simply be
he knows that the same thing will be done to him b
others whenever occasion serves, and not from any
of generosity, as may be seen from the fact that,
only be present to receive a gift, he immediately
it on some part of his person and complacently ig
its existence to all who may arrive after the event.

There is nothing of which they are so care
munition. Always difficult to obtain, and indi
in their engagements at the present day, ever
powder is preserved with extraordinary solici
their hunting excursions they never fire a gu
if it can possibly be avoided, but depend enti
their skill in approaching the game near enou
the bow and arrow. At an early period they u
fully the value of double sights on any weapo
a ball, and the old-fashioned single-barreled
a few of them possessed at that time, were
sawed into with a knife to the depth of one-ei
inch, a few inches from the breech, when the
was raised above the barrel and carefully notch
the rear sight.

At the present writing they have a consider
ber of Henry's, Spencer's and Sharp's rifles,
of the fixed ammunition required by the two
tioned. Every cartridge they get hold of is
with solicitude until it can be expended wit
advantage. These weapons have been obtai
ually by the robbery and murder of their forme
and not a few have been bought in the frontie
towns, where they were sold by immigrants
food and other supplies while crossing the
The hostilities which raged along the norther
of Mexico for four years also contributed to pl
their reach many weapons of fair quality.
know how to handle these arms with deadly
been attested on too many occasions to need
mention in these pages. From Gila Bend to
Norte is little better than a continuous g
grizzly with the rude monuments of Apache bl
iness. Town after town, once containing seve

sand inhabitants and even now showing the remains of fine brick churches; rancho after rancho, formerly stocked with hundreds of thousands of cattle and horses, and teeming with wealth; village after village all through the northern parts of Sonora and Chihuahua, the whole embraced in a belt five hundred miles long and from thirty to eighty wide, now exhibit one wide-spread and tenantless desolation, the work of the Apache Indians. For ninety consecutive years this ruthless warfare has been carried on against a timid, nearly unarmed and demoralized people. Thousands of lives have been destroyed, and thousands of women and children carried into a captivity worse than death, during that period; and yet the deadly, destructive and unholy work goes on with unrelaxed vigor. It is both sickening and maddening to ride through that region and witness the far-reaching ruin, to listen to the dreadful tales of unequaled atrocities, and note the despairing terror which the bare mention of the Apaches conjures up to their diseased and horrified imaginations.

Coming to the American side, we enter upon another field of destruction, but in nowise comparable to that which Mexico exhibits. The great majority of our sacrifices of life and property have been the results of want of caution, of fool-hardiness and too great self-reliance. As already stated, we are too prone to underrate the Apache in all respects, and by so doing set a trap for our own feet. But even on our side the border the traveler will encounter many fine farms abandoned, their buildings in ruins, and the products of years of industry wrested from their grasp. On every road little mounds of stones by the way-side, some with a rude cross, and others with a modest head-board, speak in silent but terribly suggestive language of the Apaches' bloody

work. Scattered all over Arizona are m
wealth utterly inapplicable to the us
long as that tribe remains unsubdued a
Communication between any two pla
than a mile apart, cannot be ventured
solute danger. No man can trust his
three hundred yards from the town wal
ring the risk of losing them at high noo
men and children have been carried o
time, while washing in the stream, wit
yards of their own doors and in plain sig
people. These atrocities, and others
mention, go on year after year; and th
ful result has been obtained, as migh
pected, from the puerile and ill-directe
suppress them. Wherever an intellige
ceived movement has been concerted
of the limited force in Arizona, official
variably disconcerted and paralyzed its
is no vague and untenable charge, as wi
ceeding pages. There is but one opini
throughout all Arizona. The correspo
Gov. McCormick and Gen. McDowell
has been made public through the dail
self sufficient to establish the assertio
led to the removal of Gen. McDowell
his operations. Personally, my regar
as a gentleman is very sincere; but it m
the army register contains the name of a
so utterly incapable of comprehendin
and the requirements of Indian warfar
officer he may have few equals in the se
dian campaigning, it would be difficult
so little fitted.

ines of wondrous
s of mankind so
nd unconquered.
ces, if not more
upon without ab-
animals to graze
ls without incur-
n. Mexican wo-
ff during the day
hin four hundred
ht of their towns-
unnecessary to
is far no success-
t have been ex-
d efforts made to
nt and well con-
within the power
stupidity has in-
efficiency. This
ll be seen in suc-
on on the subject
ndence between
, some of which
y papers, is in it-
, and no doubt
rom the field of
l for that officer
ay be doubted if
nother so wholly,
g Indian nature
. As a cabinet
vice; but for In-
o select another

CHAPTER XVI.

Condition of New Mexico and Arizona.—Active Campaign.—Californian
—Bosque Redondo.—More Intimate Relations with Apaches.—Site
Sumner.—Scarcity of Wood.—Climate.—Arrival of Apache Pris
War.—Dog Cañon.—Apache Embassy.—Mr. Labadie.—Placed in C
the Apaches.—Form a Council.—Hunting Excursion with Apaches.
Mode of Killing Antelopes.—Learn more of Indian Character.—
Greater Share of their Confidence.

So soon as Sibley's command had been driven
Arizona and New Mexico, Gen. Carleton devoted h
tention to protect from Indian outrage the inhab
of those Territories. Previous to our arrival no on
the hardihood to venture outside the skirts of the
and villages, unless accompanied by a force respe
in numbers, if in nothing else. The whole countr
a theater of desolation. What the Confederates
to appropriate, the Apaches destroyed. The inhab
were literally starving and utterly demoralized. In
of being able to furnish us supplies, we were comp
to afford them occasional assistance. This state of
had been foreseen by Carleton, to some extent, an
were consequently in a condition to be independen
til such protection could be granted as would induc
resident population to re-commence farming opera

Soon after our advent, Gen. Canby was recalled
the chief command invested in Carleton. From tha
a series of active and energetic campaigns again
Apache and Navajo tribes was inaugurated, which
the effect of completely humiliating those leadin

tions and re-establishing the peac
tiveness of the two Territories.
tion, and years subsequent to the
is my conviction that the many sig
over the Apaches and Navajoes
achieved by Californian soldiers,
special manner with the address
advantageously against them. Th
so frequently admitted by the resi
it is not deemed necessary to dilate
the names of such men as Robe
Shirland, the two Greens, Tidba
Pettis, and many others, who rend
compassed the security and peace
during their term of service. W
the Californian troops another se
massacres was instituted by the In
until the present time without app

In the winter of 1862–3, I was
querque to join Capt. Updegraff, c
A, Fifth United States Infantry,
Bosque Redondo, somewhere on
two hundred and fifty miles to the
bounds of all human habitation, a
the nearest civilized inhabitant.
instructed to examine the Bosque
a site for the construction of a lar
of establishing an extensive Indian
mediate neighborhood. This sort
but displeasing to me, for I much
under the nose of a commanding G
pulous ambition and exclusive selfis
a proverb, despite his acknowledg
ent zeal. But it is not my task

ce, security and produc-
After much delibera-
he incidents narrated, it
ignal triumphs obtained
s could only have been
, who seem gifted in a
s and ability to contend
This assertion has been
esident populations that
te further than mention
berts, McCleave, Fritz,
ball, Whitlock, Thayer,
ndered good service and
e of the two Territories
With the retirement of
series of robberies and
Indians, and maintained
pparent hindrance.
as ordered from Albu-
commanding company
, and to proceed to the
the Pecos river, over
e eastward—outside the
and ninety miles from
Capt. Updegraff was
e Redondo, and select
rge fort, with the view
n Reservation in its im-
t of exile was anything
preferred being from
General, whose unscru-
ishness had passed into
ged ability and appar-
to discuss matters of

this nature; and the reference is only to show
means I again became intimately acquainted
nowned Apaches and acquired their language,
with a knowledge of those traits, customs and
tions, which has enabled me to write with confide
understanding upon these and kindred points.

Capt. Updegraff was ordered to make a reconn
of the Bosque Redondo, and select a site for th
post and reservation; such selection to be appr
disapproved by a board of engineers, specially
to make a thorough survey. On arriving at the
the Captain ordered me to go ahead and select
ground; and in obedience thereto, I took ten
reconnoitered the river and its banks for several
finally fixing on a spot formerly used as a sheep
by Mexicans during a time of peace, many years
This spot was chosen for the three fold reasons
was near water, which was approachable thro
open space in the woods; that it was covered wit
lent pasture; and that it contained the stakes a
bers of the old corral, which were dry and mad
lent fire-wood. This selection was approved,
next day a further reconnoissance was made to fi
manent site for the fort. This ended in confirm
first choice, and here the most beautiful Indian
the United States was ultimately constructed, the
of engineers having indorsed the spot as being th
eligible on the river. This fort was built almost
by Californian soldiers, and is beyond comparis
handsomest and most picturesque in the Union.
theless, it was easy to comprehend that, should an
number of persons be assembled thereat, a sca
wood must ultimately occur, and as Fahrenheit
mometer occasionally falls to eight and ten degr

low zero in the winter time,
necessity. The alamo furni
material, and the extent of th
Woods, was only sixteen m
in the widest place, and for
a few scattered trees, which
in the densest portions. W
was very cold, with eight inc
and the first duty was to "
was accomplished in a shor
serviceable stables were pu
ter's and commissary's store
site shelters erected.

Scarcely had these preca
received an invoice of five
the leading warriors of the
and children, and a few of
were the savages who had s
defied all attempts to forc
nowned stronghold. Capt.
First Cavalry California
"give it a try;" and havin
succeeded in routing and
savages, who fled to Fort St
tion, closely pursued by Mc
closely, in fact, that the Ap
escape from certain destruct
selves up as prisoners of w
that time in charge of Fort
nies of infantry and one of
Carson informed McCleave
themselves under his protec
of the General commanding;
drew, not over-pleased with
whipped them handsomely

wood was an object of prime
ished the whole supply of this
e Bosque Redondo, or Round
iles long by half a mile wide
several miles affording only
were by no means thick even
When we arrived the weather
hes of snow upon the ground,
hut in" the command. This
t time, after which rude but
t up, a hospital, quartermas-
s built, and the other requi-

utions been taken before we
hundred Apaches, including
Mescalero tribe, their women
the chief Jicarillas. These
o long held Dog Cañon, and
a passage through that re-
. McCleave, of company A,
Volunteers, determined to
g obtained permission, soon
completely demoralizing the
anton for shelter and protec-
Cleave and his company—so
aches saw no other means of
tion except to deliver them-
ar to Col. "Kit" Carson, at
t Stanton, with four compa-
native New Mexican cavalry.
that the Indians had placed
ction, subject to the disposal
upon which McCleave with-
the result, although he had
in Dog Cañon.

Soon afterward five of the leading warrior
to Santa Fé, under an armed escort, to con
General, who exacted that they should subm
placed upon the reservation of the Bosqu
The answer of their chief spokesman, name
the Mexicans, but whose Apache appellati
nah-tah, or "Always Ready," is indicative o
and character of his tribe. Having listened
eral's final determination, he answered and

"You are stronger than we. We have fo
long as we had rifles and powder; but yo
better than ours. Give us like weapons
loose, we will fight you again; but we are w
have no more heart; we have no provisions,
live; your troops are everywhere; our spring
holes are either occupied or overlooked by
men. You have driven us from our last and
hold, and we have no more heart. Do with
seem good to you, but do not forget we
braves."

They were remanded back to Fort Stanto
thence sent to the Bosque Redondo, since
Sumner, where they arrived after a long
march of one hundred and thirty miles, w
tions and much suffering. They were immed
over to my charge by Capt. Updegraff, alth
dian agent, Mr. Labadie, was with them, a
moment I laid the foundation of that co
respect which was never alienated, and wh
me to perfect a knowledge of their characte
than ever arrived at by the experiences o
white man.

In a short time their number was increa
hundred, and subsequently to nearly fifte

By their own request I was authorized to take exclusive charge of their affairs. In so far as military movements were concerned, they appointed me their Nantanh-in-jah, or Chief Captain, and submitted to my arbitration all their social and tribal difficulties, my decision being final. I soon formed a council of their principal men, and lost no opportunity to make myself acquainted with their views, manners, habits, customs, religious and social observances, language, and, in fine, whatever tended to unfold their characteristics. My council consisted of Gian-nah-tah, or Always Ready; Na-tanh, or the Corn Flower; Too-ah-yay-say, or the Strong Swimmer; Natch-in-ilk-kisn, or the Colored Beads; Nah-kah-yen, or the Keen Sighted; Para-dee-ah-tran, or the Contented; Klo-sen, or the Hair Rope; and a Jicarilla man of note, whose Indian name has escaped my memory, but the meaning of which was the Kicking Horse. The renown of these warriors was too well established in the tribe to admit of doubt, and, whatever they said, was submitted to without question. How this control was obtained over these grim savages is worthy of mention, as indicative of their profound respect for personal adventure.

Five days after their arrival in camp, Mr. Labadie came to me and said: "These Indians are in great destitution. They consumed their rations two days ago, and have nothing to eat. There are many women and children among them, and two days more must elapse before rations are again distributed. Their warriors have asked that they be allowed to go hunting. The plains close by are filled with herds of antelopes, which may easily be taken. I have been to Capt. Updegraff, but he will not hearken to the proposition; please try and see what you can do, for otherwise they may attempt to escape from the Reservation."

I immediately sought the post commander and said to him: "Captain, the Apaches have asked your permission to go on a grand hunt, which you have refused; allow me to say that they are starving, that you have their wives and children as hostages for their return, and if you will recall your determination, I will volunteer to go out with them and be answerable for their safe return within forty-eight hours."

Capt. Updegraff peered at me through his black, intelligent eyes for a moment or two, and then replied: "Very well, Captain; if you choose to trust yourself with these unmitigated red devils and make yourself responsible for their return, and give me official assurance in writing, that it is indispensably necessary, you can start with them to-morrow morning at daylight; but do not remain away longer than forty-eight hours."

This resolution was forthwith conveyed to Mr. Labadie, who spread it among the Apaches, taking care to inform them by what means the favor had been granted.

Next morning, at seven o'clock, we sallied forth, the party numbering one hundred and ten Apaches, ninety-five of whom were warriors and fifteen women—the only person present, not an Apache, being myself. I had four Colt's six-shooters, two in my saddle-holsters and two in my belt, with a large bowie knife, but my horse was infinitely superior to anything they could boast in that line. They were all armed with bows and arrows—all who possessed rifles or pistols having left them in camp.

In the field, whether for warlike purposes or for hunting, the Apache is very reticent, and by no means given to talking. Conversation is only indulged while in camp, and amidst friends during a period of apparent security. But upon this occasion they gave full vent to their joy

and satisfaction, and offered me a number of little at
tions. We rode on for five miles until the top of a
was reached, from which we could obtain a fair vie
the surrounding country. Here a short consultation
held among them, during which I smoked a ciga
giving several to those close in my neighborhood.
certain direction having been selected as the field of
erations, we again started, and after having progre
about two miles, the band formed into two lines,
first being about six hundred yards in advance of
second. These two bodies then prolonged their line
that no two individuals were nearer than forty or
yards, which stretched each line to the distance of
thousand five hundred or three thousand yards, sw
ing a large surface of territory, and yet close enc
to prevent the escape of an antelope through the
human barriers, or between the huntsmen in each.
this formation we progressed until a herd was seen al
half a mile in advance. Instantly the two wings of
first line rode forward at full speed, and succeede
cutting off the retreat of the doomed animals by c
pleting a circle; at the same time the gaps were rap
closed up, and the circle narrowed with amazing cel
and dexterity. The terror-stricken antelopes turne
flee, but on every side they met an inexorable and ke
watchful enemy. Bewildered, panting with agony
fear, inclosed on all sides, they soon became incap
of continuing the unequal contest, and were killed
perfect ease. The few which contrived to break thr
the first line were sure to meet death at the hands o
second. Not one in fifty escaped, and their preserva
seemed almost miraculous. In this way we manage
destroy eighty-seven antelopes on that expedition,
it was my good fortune to kill five, being two more

were bagged by any other hunter on the field. These I gave the Apaches, reserving only a hind quarter for myself. Within thirty-six hours I had the satisfaction of reporting to Capt. Updegraff, and relating to him the complete success of our hunting excursion, at which he was so well pleased that I never afterward met any objection from that gallant and good officer when a like expedition was to be undertaken.

After this event the Apaches seemingly gave me more of their confidence than ever, but I was still far from the point ultimately reached, although I then thought I had achieved it nearly all. This fact should warn us never to arrive at hasty conclusions, especially when dealing with a people which have studiously endeavored to mislead and cozen all with whom they come in contact. I had rendered them an important service; they were grateful to me for such aid. I had trusted myself unreservedly among them, the avowed enemies of my race, and they respected me for my confidence. But I was still a white man, and they were still Apaches. While professing a certain degree of personal regard, they not only refused to admit me within the sanctum of their trust, but some of them even began to look upon me as endeavoring to gain their confidence for the purpose of betraying and using it against them should opportunity serve. Fortunately, these suspicions were allayed in the course of time, and after a year and a half of constant intercourse, during which period they and several thousand Navajoes — a branch of the great Apache race — were under my personal supervision, I was admitted to a tolerably fair knowledge of the points under consideration in this work.

CHAPTER XVII.

Satisfaction of the Apaches.—Policy.—Beneficial Results to my Men.—I
Responsibility.—Short Allowance.—The Apache Rations Continue
Carleton's Visit.—Bishop Lamy.—Supplies Received.—Apach
Governor.—Juan Cojo.—Commence Learning the Apache Languag
pile a Vocabulary.—Gradually gain Apache Confidence.—Renew
ance with Old Enemies.—Altered Relations.—Former Events
Instruction thrown Away.—Apache Ideas of Warfare.—Their
Work.—Influence of their Women.—Mescal.—Its Intoxicating Q

THE successful result of our hunting expediti
the Apaches in high spirits. They understood th
were not to be treated as prisoners of war, in th
sense of that phrase, but were to be allowed the p
of wide and extensive hunting grounds, teemin
game; were not interrupted in their social relatio
in so far as a rigid police of their camp was requ
prevent disease, and could live almost as unres
as in their native wilds, provided they were all
or duly accounted for at the stated roll-call, whi
place every evening at sunset.

Feeling that many of these privileges had b
tained through my instrumentality, they sought
daily in great numbers, and seemed inclined to
me as their protector and best friend. As it w
known that they were in constant corresponden
those of their race who had not surrendered, an
members of my company were always detailed f
tary couriers between Fort Sumner, Fort Masc
Stanton, Santa Fé, and other points, I judged
dent to gain the confidence and good will of the

to the greatest possible extent, knowing that their kindness for me would extend itself to the men of my company, and this belief was afterward fully justified when roving parties of Indians happened to meet my couriers. This occurred on several occasions, when the savages were so numerous as to make resistence out of the question. They would ride up, examine the soldier attentively, find out that he belonged to my company at Fort Sumner, bid him good-by in their best manner, and ride off, without attempting to do him harm or deprive him of horse or weapons.

About six months afterward, Gian-nah-tah, commonly called Cadete by the Mexicans, told me confidentially that neither myself nor my men would be harmed by the Apaches so long as we remained in the country, as those in camp felt that they were greatly indebted to us for many little kindnesses. This promise was carried out to the letter, and convinced me that gratitude for services rendered is by no means a strange emotion in the Apache character. I, however, doubt much if any other white man ever had the opportunity, or, having it, ever did take so much pains to win the respect and confidence of those strange and suspicious people. It will be observed that I use the word "those" in the foregoing sentence, instead of "that," and simply because each is so perfectly independent in all his belongings from all other tribes that they cannot be justly classified as a conjoint or co-operative race except for purposes of plunder and mutual defense when attacked. When summoned to prosecute hostilities, unless against some marauding party of Comanches, Navajoes, or other tribes, each individual is free to join or not as he may see fit. Should the enterprise promise plenty of plunder with but little personal risk, no trouble will be found to engage all the

warriors needed; but, no matter how gre
their force may be, no precaution for sa
lected, and no means ignored which promi
their object without loss of life. It is only w
and immediate action is necessary that they
personal independence wholly to the guid
well known and selected warrior, but the occ
that same leader falls back to his original i
the same as the President of the United St
his plain citizenship after the expiration o
office.

About this time Gen. Carleton instituted r
as to the quantity of provision on hand in
ence departments of New Mexico and Arizo
the reports made to him, came to the co
there would be somewhat of a scarcity be
could be received. Nearly three thousan
troops had been thrown into the two Te
thousand Indians—Apaches and Navajo
cumbed to our arms, the country had been
devastated by Sibley's column from Texas,
nor agricultural pursuits had been re-com
absolute want stared everybody in the f
were immediately given to shorten the rat
for the Indians on the Fort Sumner Reser
be cut down largely. The order was is
Updegraff, Fifth United States Infantry,
Fort Sumner, to take effect at a fixed dat
degraff notified Mr. Labadie, the Indian
order; Mr. Labadie communicated the fac
immediately waited upon Capt. Updegraff
him to communicate with the General com
state the following arguments: There wer
thousand Indians on that one Reservatio

been subdued by the Californian troops after great exe
tions, and the Territory rendered comparatively fr
from those terrible Indian raids that for so many yea
had laid it waste from one end to the other; that so lon
as those raids continued the industry of the peop
would be suppressed and crushed out, and that the be
guaranty which could be given the inhabitants would b
to retain the savages on the Reservation. This coul
be done so long as they had sufficient to eat. There wer
large numbers of women and children who could neithe
hunt nor obtain their livelihoods by any means excep
through the Government rations, so long as they re
mained in semi-captivity; that the Reservation farm wa
not yet in a condition to yield the requisite support, an
that if their rations were diminished, a spirit of intens
dissatisfaction would display itself in the escape of thou
sands whom it would be impossible to restrain with ou
very limited force, and that the escaping parties would
immediately betake themselves to plunder, assassination
and destructive inroads. I, therefore, begged Capt
Updegraff to represent these and other cogent arguments to the General, with a view of having the full ra
tion continued to the Indians.

These arguments had weight with the Post Commander, and were by him urged on the attention of the
General, who immediately perceived their truthfulness,
and ordered the full ration continued until such time as
he could make personal investigation. Fortunately an
opportunity soon occurred, and the General visited Fort
Sumner with several officers and the Rt. Rev. Bishop
Lamy, Bishop of New Mexico.

Next day Capt. Updegraff candidly informed the General that I had prompted his letter, and I was summoned to the interview which followed. After a careful inquiry

and examination of several days, Gen.
at the same opinion with myself, and t
ordered to be given as before. Six we
the several Commissaries in the two
official returns of their supplies, and i
their former estimates were far short
the same time subsistence stores began
East, and the new crops were being h
for the first time for many years. Up
tations, orders were issued to restore
the troops, and abundance once more
bles. Whether right or wrong, the s
by Mr. Labadie to believe that I was
agency had preserved them from hal
reader can well suppose how much I
mation. I was appointed grand direc
with power to decide all differences a
rels between parties. Every grievance
was submitted for my jurisdiction; a
add, that my administration was regar
ate reverence. Those wild and u
daughters of the forests, the plains a
would throng my *casita* from reveille
a thousand questions and always rece
tion. Among them was a Mexican,
old, who had been a captive to their
for twenty odd years. He was taken
and did not obtain his release until h
three. That man, Juan Cojo, spoke
fluently as themselves, and had been
preter. Juan and I soon became goo
I must confess that his Apache educa
unfitted him to be the most moral c
quaintance. Nevertheless, his servic

n. Carleton arrived
the full ration was
eeks subsequently
o Territories made
it was found that
s of the mark. At
n to arrive from the
harvested, *in peace*,
pon these represen-
full rations to all
e gladdened our ta-
savages were taught
s the person whose
alf rations, and the
I rose in their esti-
ctor of their camps,
and settle all quar-
ce, real or imagined,
and, I am proud to
rded with affection-
untamed sons and
and the mountains,
until tattoo, asking
eiving proper atten-
s, about forty years
r "bow and spear"
at the age of eleven
he was past thirty-
e their language as
n engaged as inter-
od friends, although
ation had somewhat
character of my ac-
ces were indispensa-

ble, and I induced Gen. Carleton to appropr
dollars per month additional pay to Juan, to
the Apache language. The fellow worked
with me for nearly three months, during whic
compiled the only vocabulary of the Apache lan
existence, and forwarded the result of my labor
Carleton, with the view of having it published
eral use at the different posts in New Mexico
izona. The General sent the manuscript to th
sonian Institution, and it was placed in the
Prof. George Gibbs for publication in an e
work on Ethnology, to be issued under the
of the Institution. I have waited several year
appearance, but have not yet seen anything of
Perhaps it will some day come to light. In th
time, I received from the Institution an acknowl
of my labors, the chief credit being given to Ge
ton—probably because he was General, and I
Captain, subject to his orders. Let that be as i
felt both pride and pleasure in acquiring a l
never before spoken by a white man, and I too
pains to systematize it as far as practicable, or m
ties could go. In order to be certain about the
ity of my novel acquirement, I every day submitt
I had learned the day previous to the criticism
leading warriors of the tribe. They expressed m
light at my desire to learn and communicate wi
in their own tongue, and manifested zeal in put
right on all occasions. Nothing was committed
record until it had been fully tested four or fiv
and I believe the work to be as nearly perfect a
be got up under the circumstances.

This zeal on my part enhanced the favorable
the Apaches already held toward me, and rendere

unusually communicative. So soo
I was anxious to converse with the
guage, and had labored to acquir
and regard increased in geometrica
not unusual with them, when ask
officer being present, to address me
little secrets were never betrayed.
no difficulty to comprehend how
stances, the writer should have g
over this most untamable and inter
our Indian tribes. It was not the
of a year, but the experience of se
events which may never happen a
had seen and known me while int
dary Commission under the Ho
Some of them were present and to
chase along the Jornada del Muer
me of the event, after they became
their best friend and harbored
against the parties. While conv
one day, a warrior led to me an
daughters and one son, all grown
about twenty-two, and informed
wife and children of the man who
me thirteen years before. I recei
asked if they did not think it b
should be alive to do them kindn
been murdered by their relatives i
by saying, "Yes, much better," la
to give them some vermilion—a c
by the Apaches.

On the Reservation were one or
be at the Copper Mines at the tim
and the two Mexican boys were

oon as they found that
them in their own lan-
uire it, their confidence
cal progression. It was
asking a favor, another
me in Apache, and their
l. The reader will have
ow, under such circum-
e gained an ascendancy
tensely suspicious of all
he work of a month nor
several years, aided by
again. Many of them
interpreter of the Boun-
Hon. John R. Bartlett.
took part in that terrific
érto, and they reminded
me convinced that I was
l no vindictive feelings
nversing on this matter
an old squaw, her two
wn up, the oldest being
d me that they were the
ho led the chase against
ceived them kindly, and
better for them that I
dness then, than to have
s in 1850. They replied
laughing and asking me
color very highly prized

or two who happened to
time that Inez Gonzales
re rescued, as related in

---

preceding chapters, but they never could
comprehend the justice of those rescues, u
them—"You took those people captive by f
not?"

"Yes; we took them because we were s
more expert than they."

"Well, I took them from you for the sa
We were stronger and more expert than you
prived you of your spoil. Suppose you we
small band of Comanches with two or thr
horses which they had stolen from Mexican
your party were the stronger of the two, wo
take their spoil?"

"Certainly, because they would do so to u
circumstances."

"Very well; you would have taken two An
and an American girl, if you had met them u
I know, because you have done it; and we to
people, but those you had reduced to captiv
stored them to their relatives. We did not
for our servants and slaves; but, they being
we released them from your grasp when we
in distress. The same rule you apply to the
and all other peoples we applied to you; w
right?"

The justice and pertinence of these remar
mitted with reluctance, for the untutored Ap
like that of what is called high civilization
ment, is eminently selfish and obtuse to m
tion. Extremes meet.

It was, nevertheless, pleasant to recall the
I had escaped their well-laid plans to depri
my associates of life or property, and the as
sions in which they had been foiled in their

intentions. The sanguinary de
of Cuchillo Negro, of Ponce, c
and other renowned warriors,
futility of their efforts to comb
white men. Their then depend
their defenseless condition c
rapidly decreasing numbers, t
and other like examples, were
phasized, and had momentary
after admitting the severe less
resume their hauteur and exc
seemed as good weapons as ou
of the country they claimed as

The teachings of experience
He believes himself the superi
versities are accounted for in
ways that his self-love and inc
appeased. He has shown hi
for other barbarous tribes, and
tives of New Mexico and Ari
cause we inhabit the houses o
consort with them freely, in th
that we are of the same general
admits the superior gallantry
ican race, but attributes them
superiority of our weapons.
more precaution in approachin
Mexican; but this renders his
and guarded against, althoug
subtlety and careful considera
no matter against whom direc
ing feature of the Apache. I
proach a single armed travel
caution.

deaths of Mangas Colorado,
, of Delgadito, of Amarillo,
, were cited in proof of the
nbat successfully against the
ndence, as prisoners of war,
on the Reservation, their
, their disintegrating forces,
re also pointed out and em-
ary effect; but the next day,
ssons of history, they would
exclaim, "that if they pos-
ours, they could whip us out
as exclusively their own."
ce are lost upon the Apache.
erior being, and frequent ad-
in so many and plausible
inordinate vanity are always
himself more than a match
nd for the semi-civilized na-
rizona. He infers that be-
of the last mentioned, and
the absence of other society,
ral stamp and character. He
y and prowess of the Amer-
m to our confidence in the
The result is that he uses
hing the American than the
is attacks more to be dreaded
ugh he never loses sight of
eration in all his movements,
ected. This is a distinguish-
If fifty of them were to ap-
eler they would do so with

Like all other savages they high
strength and personal courage, but a
reference to the latter quality. Wh
led the famous charge of the six hun
it was carefully observed by the Fre
issier, who exclaimed: "*C'est beau,*
c'est ni pas de la guerre." In like m
regards our reckless onsets as vain a
in the habit of saying: "The Americ
they lack astuteness. They build a
throws out so much heat that they c
to warm themselves, and when they
they are absurd enough to rush to t
not so with us; we build small fires i
which cannot be seen by persons u
we gather near to them so as to obtai
when we hear a gun fired we get away
ble to some place from which we
cause." They regard our daring a
"discretion the better part of valor."
but that they are correct in this idea,
eral others.

There is nothing which an Apache
detestation than labor or work of an
pations unconnected with war or plun
altogether beneath his dignity and a
patiently and industriously manufac
quiver full of arrows, his spear and o
disdains all other kinds of employmen
the pangs of hunger before engaging
absolutely refuses to cultivate the g
cost of simply sowing the seed; but
take the war-path, and will undergo
ferings and hardships for the hope o

Herein lies his credit and fame as a warrior; upon his success in such undertakings rests his whole celebrity and standing among the squaws whom he affects to treat with indifference, but whose smiles and favors are, after all, the greatest incentives to his acts. It is a grand mistake to suppose that because the Apaches are seemingly indifferent to the condition of their women—that, because like other savage tribes, they force the burden of hard labor upon them, they are not elated by their praises or humbled by their censures. On the contrary, they are keenly alive to such sensations, and under the mask of apparent indifference and assumed superiority are quite as susceptible to the blandishments of the female sex, and to their opinions as regards merits, as the most civilized and enlightened of their fellow countrymen—white Americans. After a successful raid they are received with songs and rejoicings. Their deeds are rehearsed with many eulogiums, and they become great, in their own estimations, for a while. But if unsuccessful, they meet with jeers and insults. The women turn away from them with assumed indifference and contempt. They are upbraided as cowards, or for want of skill and tact, and are told that such men should not have wives, because they do not know how to provide for their wants. When so reproached, the warriors hang their heads and offer no excuse for failure. To do so would only subject them to more ridicule and objurgation; but, Indian-like, they bide their time, in the hope of finally making their peace by some successful raid. When it is understood that the Apaches neither sow nor plant, that they do not cultivate the ground, that they manufacture nothing except their arms, that they depend altogether upon their wars for plunder as a means of livelihood with the exceptional occasions of hunting, that their women collect all the mescal for food and intoxicating drink, that they dig all the roots, gather all the seeds, and make them into food, there will be no difficulty in perceiving that the women are their real supporters.

In some branches of the great tribe, residing on the head-waters of the Gila, and among the Mescaleros and Jicarillas, a very limited amount of planting is done, extending mainly to maize, pumpkins, squashes and beans. Their great dependence is on mescal, the roots of which are collected in quantity and placed in a large hole dug in the ground and highly heated. The mescal roots, being deposited, are then covered with green leaves and grass, which is in turn overlaid with earth, and a steady fire kept burning on top for a whole day. After allowing the mass to remain in this impromptu oven for three days, it is unearthed, pared and eaten with great zest. It has a sweetish taste, not unlike the beet; but it is not so tender, and possesses remarkable anti-scorbutic properties. In order to make an intoxicating beverage of the mescal, the roasted root is macerated in a proportionable quantity of water, which is allowed to stand several days, when it ferments rapidly. The liquor is boiled down and produces a strongly intoxicating fluid.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Dangerous Hunting at the Bosque.—Dr. McNulty's Adventure.—Don Carlos and his Indians.—Mr. Descourtis' Adventure.—Nah-kah-yen and Nah-tanh.—Hunting a Lion.—The Indian and the Panther.—Combat Between a Bear and a Lion.—The Result.—Beavers.—Apache Love of Torturing.—Gallant Indian.—A Wounded Apache to be Dreaded.

Among the Apaches under my charge were a number highly renowned as hunters. Those men seemed to possess a peculiar sagacity for this business, and whenever I indulged in a hunt I invariably took one or more of them with me. The Pecos for twenty-five miles about the Bosque Redondo is fringed for a half mile in depth, on both sides, with gigantic cotton-wood trees, or rather it was, for I have since learned that they were nearly all destroyed in furnishing fuel to the numerous body of Indians collected at Fort Sumner, and for the garrison at that place; and in consequence of the scarcity now existing, the fort and Reservation have either been abandoned by this time, or soon will be, as the Indian Department has already taken steps to locate the Reservation on a more favorable location.

The cotton-woods and the dense undergrowth of shrubbery, which produced many kinds of wild berries, and large fields of wild sun-flowers, abounding with nutricious seeds, render the Bosque Redondo a favorite abode with wild turkeys, which existed there in great numbers, and were exceedingly fat and fine flavored. My Apache friends kept my larder lavishly supplied with turkeys, grouse, deer, bear and antelope hams, and a species of very superior turtle, which is abundant in that part of the Pecos river. I have had as many as seven live wild turkeys in my corral at one time, and quite as many dead opes dressed and hanging up. On public days, such as New Year, Christmas, Fourth of July, and sometimes on Sundays, my company were fully supplied with good things from my private larder. But hunting was somewhat of a dangerous pastime in that vicinity. Prowling bands of hostile Apaches, Navajoes and Comanches were at any time liable to be met, and it was safe practice, when double-barreled guns were used, to place a dozen well-fitting balls in one's pouch and a goodly quantity of heavy buck-shot. Besides, what are known as Californian lions, were very plentiful, while catamounts, panthers, grizzly bears, and even jaguars were by no means uncommon. The Apaches never ventured out unless in sufficient force to resist an ordinary attack, until they had resided there some time and had made themselves perfect masters of the situation. On the other hand, the Comanches, with whom the Bosque Redondo had formerly been a chosen hunting ground, gradually but reluctantly withdrew, when they found out that the Apaches were numerous and would be protected by our troops.

Soon after our first arrival at that spot—then a howling wilderness, ninety miles distant from the nearest habitation—a commission of engineers, headed by Col. A. L. Anderson, was sent down to the Bosque, for the purpose of selecting a site for a permanent fort, to be called Fort Sumner, with the view of establishing a large Indian Reservation there, and erecting a valuable advance post on the line of approach from Texas. Among our visitors was Dr. J. M. McNulty, then Medical Director for New Mexico and Arizona, and probably the

most popular officer in the "Column from Califor
The Doctor and myself had long been acquainted,
was proud to have the privilege of showing him
little attention; but his visit came near being atte
with fatal results, to him at least. When we left A
querque for the Bosque Redondo, Gen. Carleton
plied us with five semi-civilized Indians from a
about eighteen miles distant from Santa Fé, the
of which has escaped my memory. The chief o
tribe was named Don Carlos, a man about fifty-five
of age—short, thick-set and resolute. He had v
Washington, New York, Philadelphia, and other
ern cities, and had an exalted opinion of the A
can people. Dr. McNulty, learning that wild tu
abounded in the immediate vicinity, determined
on a hunt for some of those delicate birds, and too
of Don Carlos' Indians as a guide. As the distan
be traveled was not more than a mile and a half
waited until within half an hour of sundown, and
repaired to the roosting place. The birds wer
gathering upon the tree, and the Doctor determin
wait a little until they got quiet, when he perceive
a band of hostile Indians were as eagerly watchin
as he the turkeys. His guide also became cogniz
the fact about the same time, and both turned
horses to recross the river and gain our side—for
known, that the banks of the Pecos are from
twenty-five feet perpendicular descent, and that
ings are only found at rare intervals—and the D
having crossed, was compelled to seek the same f
his return. The Apaches, for they were of that
perceiving his intention, made a bold and con
effort to cut him off, but the Doctor succeeded in
their plan, and returned safely to camp much

than he had gone. His ardor to obtain wild turkeys of his own killing at the Bosque Redondo was considerably cooled by this adventure.

Another more serious, but very laughable, adventure occurred on a turkey hunt a few days afterward. My First Lieutenant, Mr. Descourtis, was exceedingly fond of the chase, and he joined me about that time, after nearly nine months absence from his company, in obedience to very strict orders from Gen. Carleton. One evening he determined to go and shoot some wild turkeys, and engaged one of the Indians of Don Carlos. About an hour after their departure the guide came back howling with pain, and declared that Descourtis had shot him. Upon examination it was found that his posteriors were fully pitted with small shot, and upon the return of Mr. Descourtis, which occurred about five minutes later, that officer stated that his gun had gone off accidentally and shot the Indian. The wounds were painful, but by no means dangerous, and under the skillful treatment of Dr. Gwyther, Post Surgeon, were healed in a few days. The Indian subsequently said, that on arriving at the ground he perceived a band of hostile Apaches or Navajoes, and warned Mr. Descourtis of their presence; but he failed to discover them. The guide then told him that he would not risk his life for a turkey or two, and started to leave him, when Mr. Descourtis became enraged and shot him. I cannot pretend to decide between the two, but it is certain that Mr. Descourtis brought back no turkeys, and the Indian fetched a whole load of shot in his carcass, and both came home as fast as their horses would carry them; but the Indian's animal having received a liberal supply of the same pellets in his rear, came much the quicker. This event greatly disgusted Don Carlos and his people, and it was

only with infinite trouble, during the time tha
was under surgical treatment, that I could
the old man to remain and fulfill his contr
of them could ever be induced to approach
again.

Among the Apaches was one who partic
shone the rest in the chase. He was a you
about twenty-seven years, named Nah-kah-
"Keen Sighted," a reputation to which he w
titled. This man's knowledge of woodcra
habits of animals, was really wonderful. H
only perceive an object so distant as to be
visible, but could distinguish the particul
Nah-kah-yen was of medium height, well for
active as a panther. He was a sort of da
them, being always the best dressed, and pa
tention to his hair, which was always kept w
and oiled. His long scalp lock was an esp
of attention, and highly ornamented with
plates, made into little round shields—butt
feathers and tinsel. Another of my most tr
ites was a grim old warrior named Nah-t
"Corn Flower," commonly called Chato by
cans, on account of his large nose which had
and flattened by the kick of a horse. Nah-tan
esteemed in his tribe, both as a warrior an
counselor. He was about forty years old, we
two hundred pounds; broad and deep-cheste
erful and very grave — scarcely ever deignin
His decision in reference to the qualities of
weapon was considered final. He had been
most dreaded scourges in the country, but
rendered he professed his determination to
promise, and during the whole term of my

New Mexico he kept his word faithfully. His imperturbable coolness and profound sagacity, especially on a bear or lion hunt, proved very serviceable.

After killing an animal I would give the skin to the Apaches to have it dressed for me, and they turned me out some elegant deer, lion and beaver skins, softly dressed, with the fur perfectly preserved. Having discovered the tracks of a very large lion along the river-bottom, I summoned Nah-kah-yen and Nah-tanh to accompany me on the hunt for his majesty. Both were eager, and we started about ten o'clock A. M. I showed them the trail, which they examined carefully for a few moments, and then concluded that the animal had a haunt in a jungle about five miles below. Without pretending to follow up the tracks we struck off into the clear prairie, and went down stream until opposite the jungle, when we separated, each one taking a side of what we supposed to be the animal's lair, and at a signal we approached together. At that place the Pecos is about eight feet deep for a couple of hundred yards, when it shoals again to one, two and three feet, the river being much wider. The jungle was neared with caution, and it being about midday, there was good reason to suppose that the lion was taking his rest after a night's rambles. One large cotton-wood tree flung its branches out wider than the rest, while its top overlooked its surrounding comrades. It grew on the very bank of the river, and overhung the jungle. Nah-tanh dismounted from his horse, which was left free, and being perfectly broken, remained quiet where he was left; he then climbed the tree referred to and crawled out on a large limb, until he was directly over the water and could get a fair view of the supposed lair.

The Californian lion and the panther are both cow-

ardly animals, and will rarely stand a
wounded; but there are exceptional
times they will become the attacking
Nah-tanh was endeavoring to penetra
the thicket, he was summoned by Nah
out for himself, and gazing in the direc
we saw a large panther crouching on
more than fifteen feet from Nah-tanh, a
on trying titles with my friend. In an
yen raised his rifle and took a rapid
but the ball only inflicted a slight flesh
him hasten his motions, for in another
his spring toward Nah-tanh. That w
not to be so easily caught, for the inst
ther left the limb on which he had bee
tanh dropped from his into the water
and disappeared under the surface, nor
until he had reached the friendly she
out of his enemy's sight. The panthe
spot so suddenly vacated, and gazed anx
the depths below, cracking his tail agai
clawing great pieces of the bark fro
this time Nah-kah-yen had reloaded, an
with my breech-loading carbine and
revolvers. We both took good aim
beast from his high perch. We soon h
to land and stripped him of his hide.
mous specimen, measuring nearly seven
of his tail to the end of his nose. I br
California with me as a souvenir of the
subsequently made it a present to P
When Nah-tanh surveyed the lifeless
antagonist, he smiled grimly and said:
shis Inday to-dah ishan;" which mea
Apache is no food for you."

ay, even when
s, and some-
rties. While
the secrets of
ah-yen to look
on pointed out,
other limb, not
l evidently bent
stant Nah-kah-
t at the beast,
ound and made
oment he made
y Apache was
t that the pan-
rouching Nah-
me thirty feet,
d he rise again
r of the bank,
landed on the
usly down into
t his sides and
the limb. By
I had come up
heavy Colt's
d brought the
led his carcass
was an enor-
et from the tip
ght his skin to
ccurrence, and
ip Martinetti.
dy of his late
Tagoon-ya-dah;
—"Fool; an

We were about to return home, when our atte
was attracted by a terrible noise in a rocky cañon,
four hundred yards lower down the river. Hasti
mounting, we galloped to the place, and after h
dismounted, approached the cañon with caution.
denly we came upon a very exciting and intere
scene. A very large lion, probably the one of whic
were in pursuit, was engaged in deadly conflict w
well-developed brown bear. The lion was crou
down about twelve feet from bruin, and the bear
standing erect on his hind legs, his forearms protru
and his back against a large rock. His cries were p
ing, and to them we owed the pleasure of being pre
at the combat, which quickly began. The lion wat
his adversary with intense gaze, his long and sinewy
working and twisting like a large wounded serpent.
formidable claws occasionally grappled the rocks
gravel, and every now and then he would exhibit
terrible teeth and utter a low but significant gr
Having reached the sticking point, the lion leaped
ward with a fearful rush and grappled the bear. T
commenced the most frightful cries from both—fur,
and blood flew from each combatant in quantities; bit
tearing and hugging were indulged without stint. A
about two minutes of this terrific strife, the lion s
denly released himself and sprang away. Each ani
then commenced to lick its wounds, the lion having
occupied his former position in front of the bear,
evidently bent on "fighting it out on that line if it t
all summer." The bear was decidedly anxious to
away, but did not dare turn his back on his more a
adversary. After some ten minutes spent in lick
their wounds and repairing damages, the lion reassu
the offensive, and the bear again placed himself on

defensive. The same scene was rep
the lion had succeeded in tearing
and drawing his vitals through the
dead, and the lion hauled off onc
wounds. Having taken breath, he
to haul the bear's carcass down into
it with leaves, sand and other debris
the crack of a rifle, and the late con
on his side dead, beside the body of
received a rifle ball just back of the
of Nah-tanh, who had by no mean
recent encounter. This beast meas
inches and a half from the end of h
his tail. His skin I also preserved
sented it to Major (now General)
commanding Fort Sumner. As we
could carry, Nah-kah-yen was dispa
camp to bring some pack horses, a
the meat and take it to camp, for th
fond of lion and panther meat, but
the bear. This was sport enough f
discovering a couple of fine turkey
home, quite elated with the result

Beavers were quite plentiful on t
Sumner, and we used to enjoy sh
moonlight nights. The Apaches h
the beaver, which they aver to be h
cious and intelligent of animals. T
very large, and in midwinter have
heavy and soft fur. Their tails, ro
a capital dish, and are much esteem
and musky for most stomachs. T
me quite a number of young ones,
milk was difficult to obtain, and

eated, but this time
pen the bear's back
ap. The bear fell
more to lick his
leisurely proceeded
the cañon and bury
Just then I heard
ueror tumbled over
his late foe, having
ar from the weapon
forgotten his own
red seven feet seven
s nose to the tip of
and afterward pre-
I. D. Whalen, then
had more than we
ched to the Apache
d squaws to cut up
Apaches are rather
eldom touch that of
r one day, and after
roosts, we returned
f our hunt.

e Pecos, about Fort
oting them on fine
ve a great regard for
y far the most saga-
e Pecos beavers are
an unusually thick,
sted in ashes, make
ed, but rather too fat
he Apaches brought
bout a week old, but
I only succeeded in

raising one until it got to be three months old an
to care for itself, when I released the poor thing
turning it to its tribe. It had become quite a p
would perform several little tricks with ease. As
brought up among human beings, it possessed n
the native fear of man which is so strongly charac
of its race, and it is quite probable that the poo
fellow subsequently fell a victim to misplaced conf
although I carried it six miles below camp, wher
was a large beaver dam, before restoring it to fr

The quality of mercy is unknown among the Ap
They frequently take birds and animals alive, but
ably give them to their children to torture. A
is seized with delight when his son exhibits super
in this way. He looks on approvingly and make
sional suggestions to the aspiring youth. The
are especially pleased with the precociousness o
children in the art of torturing. Even their hor
not spared, and their dogs may truly be said
"dogs' lives." What we call chivalry is also unkn
the Apache, who regards it as sheer folly and
risk of life; yet there are instances of self-sacrif
heroic devotion which would be second to none r
in history, were it not for the fact that in each c
hero was mortally wounded before he displayed s
able bravery for the safety of others. A badly w
Indian is much more dangerous than one who
Feeling that he cannot escape, his first object is
as many of his foes as possible, and protect h
people to the last gasp. I have seen a single A
stationed at the narrow entrance to a defile, rece
carbine balls through the breast before he sank
knees, and every time the cavalry charged th
would keep back the horses by dashing a red bl

their faces. By this heroism
life he saved some sixty or
gained time to retreat ami
was only finished by receivi
brain, and continued fightin
ally dispatched. His bow a
in the rooms of the Californ

and wonderful tenacity of
seventy of his people, who
dist inaccessible rocks. He
g a pistol ball through the
g, single-handed, until fin-
nd quiver of arrows are now
ia Pioneers.

CHAPTER XIX.

Anecdote of Capt. Bristol.—Surprise and Admiration of t
Him a Great Medicine.—Wonders of the Microsc
Hunting.—Departure of Ojo Blanco.—Apache D
Influenza.—Apache Prophet.—His Dream and Inte
ter Dream and Interpretation.—Useful Services o
fulness of Gian-nah-tah.—Necessity of Using Artifi

Among the many unique incidents wh
Fort Sumner may be mentioned one, wh
effect among the Indians gathered at t
Navajoes, who had become captives to
of the Column from California, numb
thousand, including well known chi
guished warriors, women and children.
proper, who were in like condition, amo
fifteen hundred. This disparity is suffici
superior warlike character of the latter
vincible determination to "fight it out on
their utter intractability. Capt. H. B.
United States Infantry, was one of thos
hearted and educated gentlemen who
faculty of attaching all within the sphe
quaintance. A strict disciplinarian, and
deep-seated love for his profession, he po
of gaining the affections and confidence
well as their implicit obedience to order.
modo et fortiter in re, for which he becam
in the command, gradually spread its in
the Indians, who are ever ready to appre

nize those characteristics which influence other men.
a short time his cabin became a popular resort amo
the nomads, who were delighted with his generosit
while he experienced a pleasure in studying their va
ous attributes. Capt. Bristol frequently amused l
friends by sticking pins and needles in various parts
his person, driving them in full length without appe
ing to suffer a particle of inconvenience. One afternoo
while his cabin was full of savages, he proceeded to p
his pantaloons fast to his thighs with pins, until an hu
dred or more were imbedded in his flesh, without dra
ing blood, or provoking any evidence of distress. T
Apaches and Navajoes were filled with surprise and a
miration, while the officers present pretended to be a
flicted with anxiety. Having succeeded so far, Brist
deliberately opened his penknife, and thrust the bla
alongside of the pins. He then invited the Indians
plunge their knives into his body, assuring them that
could do him no harm. This last *coup de jonglerie* co
pletely upset all their doubts, and with one accord, th
voted him to be a "great medicine." From that da
his influence was very considerable, as they believed th
he could not be slain by ordinary means. All this w
done without ostentation, and in a purely natural ma
ner. No attempt was made to impress the savage vis
tors with an idea of superiority, and they accorded the
full homage and respect to the act. Had they been le
to understand that some extraordinary ability of th
white man was to be exhibited; had they been told tha
something was to be done in the "medicine" line exce
ling what they could do, they would have regarded th
affair with distrust, suspicion and aversion; but it wa
so *impromptu* and unaffected that their confidence wa
won, and their belief fixed.

Quite a number of other innocent devices were resorted to for the purpose of quietly infiltrating the Apache mind with a sense of our superiority, but always most carefully guarding against any appearance of seeking to contrast American attainment with savage ignorance. Their bigotry and self-conceit could not be rudely assailed without exciting their natural distrust and alarm. They were ready to perceive a "nigger in every fence," and were ever on the alert to detect the slightest approximation to deceit, or effort to mislead by the assumption of higher intelligence. A person once discovered in the attempt to make them believe that in which he himself had no faith, is immediately and forever tabooed. No subsequent acts or promises of his could restore their confidence. It was after I had acquired a very fair knowledge of their language that these traits became fully apparent, and I made it my study to conduct myself in such a manner as to allay all doubts.

I possessed a very good microscope, which I had purchased from a French priest, and also an excellent sundial, with several other instruments, such as burning-glass, field-glass, compass, several maps of New Mexico, etc. The anxiety to show the wonders of these instruments to my untutored visitors was very great, but I felt the imprudence of so doing until occasion could serve, when it would appear the result of their application, and not of my ostentation.

One day, while receiving instruction from Juan Cojo, my preceptor in the Apache language, I suddenly pretended that it was necessary for me to examine a minute object whose conformation was somewhat indistinguishable to the naked eye. Juan watched me with intense interest as I uncased the microscope and placed beneath its focus the body of a common flea. I was careful not

to ask him to view the object, feeling convinced th
own curiosity would induce him to make the re
After I had gazed attentively for a few seconds,
asked what I was looking at, and I told him that
an instrument which made a flea look as large as
and showed me his whole conformation. He im
ately expressed a desire to see this monster, and
being accorded a good, long look, he exclaimed: "
de Dios, que cosa tan hororosa!"—which means,
of God, what a horrible thing. In this manner w
through half a dozen objects, each of which elicit
pressions of unbounded surprise from Juan, wh
menced to regard me as a magician of power and
ence. In this way the train was laid for further
dence on the part of the savages, to whom Juan
the whole affair, because I had never employe
means to assert claims to their respect, and had
ently striven to keep my possession of them fro
knowledge. They seemed to have got their infor
by accident, and I allowed them to press me fre
before I yielded to their request for a look thro
wonderful instrument of which they had hear
Juan. Their admiration was also excited by th
ing-glass, field-glass, etc.; and when I took out th
and explained to them all about portions of the
which they knew well, but I had never visited,
gan to think that nothing was hidden from our
edge if we only took the pains to consult our
instruments.

During all the time of our intimate relations,
great an inquirer into their funds of informatio
were into that which I possessed. I was regu
ducted into their modes of hunting, and taug
and when the desired game might be expected.

of tracking was also sedulously shown me, but this requires very long and constant practice. Their code of signals by smokes, stones, broken branches, etc., was explained with apparent delight, in the conviction that the white man could learn something from them.

The force at Fort Sumner was so ludicrously small, in comparison with the number of Indians to be controlled and guarded, that I am convinced the savages would never have remained so long as they did had it not been for the extreme vigilance employed, and the peculiar policy adopted. In fact, within six months after my departure, Ojo Blanco, a famous Apache, took French leave of Fort Sumner, after having induced a goodly number of others to keep him company, and it was not long before nearly all the rest of his tribe followed the example.

Nothing can induce the Apaches to remain an hour in the place where one of them has died from disease, and they give a wide berth to all localities where Apaches have been known to give up the ghost from any cause.

The nearest town was Anton Chico, nearly ninety miles distant, and there were quite a number of well-known villages ranging from one hundred to one hundred and thirty miles northwest, west and southwest from the fort. The influenza was raging in the settlements, and had become epidemic. A great many children and quite a number of adults in the Mexican towns fell victims to the disease, which had assumed a malignant type. It soon made its appearance among the Apaches, but Dr. Gwyther, assisted by myself as interpreter, was unremitting in his attention, and by timely and judicious efforts, prevented the disease from being fatal in a single case, although nearly all were more or less affected. A wily and rascally old Apache, who had wielded great influence among them as a medicin seized upon the occasion to sow disaffection and tent. He upbraided them for their servile obedi the whites, covered them with reproach for yielded their absolute independence, and taunte in every conceivable way. These things were told Gian-nah-tah, Nah-tanh, Natch-in-ilk-kisn, and N yen, but the fact of their telling me was suffic prove that the prophet was not to be feared, and seled them to keep quiet and let me know all that but on no account to acquaint their comrades w secret of their having told me anything about su ceedings.

One day Gian-nah-tah stated that the prophet h a great gathering the evening before, at which he plained a vision. The time selected was about mi The Apaches sat in a dense circle, in the center o stood the prophet dressed in the savage decora his sacred office. His eager auditors were inform he had been blessed with a vision in which h black cloud about the size of his blanket. Th rose gradually from the west and increased as it darkness and magnitude, until it covered a larg Its course was directed toward the Apache can which it hovered and then descended until the ca completely enveloped within its Cimmerian fold interpretation of this vision was that the blac represented the anger of the Great Spirit, and had sent it among the Apaches to slay them with for having remained captive to the America threatened that if they did not all leave at the possible opportunity, not one would be saved anger of the Great Spirit. It may well be s that such an announcement from their most no icine man at a time when a terrific epidemic was raging, would have an immense influence among those savage and extremely superstitious people.

My determination what to do was immediately taken, and without intimating to Gian-nah-tah what my intention was, I bade him convoke the whole camp on the following night, as near midnight as possible. The moon was very brilliant, and the air clear and perfectly still. I placed a couple of six-shooters and my knife in my belt, and cutting a hole for my head in the center of a sheet, invested myself with that article as if it were a toga. When the Apaches were all assembled, and wondering why they were got together, I suddenly made my appearance among them, and taking position in the center, addressed them to the following effect. I told them that I had been favored with a vision, full of importance to them, and as they had appointed me their "Tata," or Governor, it had been imparted to me for their benefit. I said that two nights previous their prophet had seen a black cloud, which grew larger and blacker as it approached the Apache camp, over which it settled until it was concealed from sight; but that a lying spirit had been put into his mouth, and the true meaning of the vision had been withheld from his knowledge. In my capacity as their Tata, it had been revealed to me, with directions to impart it to the tribe.

They knew, I added, that the Angel of Death had been very busy among the Mexican towns and villages, cutting off the men, women and children, and sparing neither age nor condition. But who among you, said I, have died? Where is the wife that mourns for her husband, or the mother for the child, or the warrior for those that are dear to him? Not one of your number is missing, and all of you are now well or nearly well from the attacks of this infirmity which has killed so many.

Now, the true rendering of the vision is this
Spirit has seen with satisfaction that you ha
promise, that you no longer exist by robb
do not murder the incautious traveler, that
happily and well supplied with every com
cared for by skillful medicine men when y
and in reward for your excellent conduc
Spirit said—I have sent the Angel of Dea
the land and he knows nothing but to des
is his mission. My Apache people have d
must be preserved, and to shield them fr
of the Destroying Angel, I will wrap the
cloud which his eyes cannot penetrate; the
them by, and they shall live because they h
promise to the Americans. This, I adde
rendering of the vision seen by your prop
come here to tell you, in order that his evi
not prevail and lead you to destruction.

The reader can conjecture the rage of th
the profound astonishment of the whole
Gian-nah-tah. No one but he knew that I
information on the subject, and, of cours
the prophet included, doubted the reality
said. The contemplated hegira came to a
the Apaches returned to their allegiance w
ingness than before, and our intercourse
harmonious than ever. For my part, I w
satisfied with the result than if we had b
to use force and slay a hundred or two o
before again impressing them with the nec
dience. The prophet lost his influence, w
in proportion.

The foregoing incident conveys its ow
shows the virtue of using artifice instead o
artifice has to be met.

: The Great
ave kept your
ery, that you
you live here
fort, and are
you are sick;
t, the Good
th abroad in
troy, for that
one well and
oin the vision
em in a dark
n will he pass
ave kept their
d, is the true
het, and I am
l counsel may

e prophet and
tribe, except
possessed any
e, not a soul,
of what I had
sudden end;
ith more will-
became more
was far better
een compelled
of the savages
essity for obe-
hile we gained

n moral, and-
of force, when

CHAPTER XX.

The Apache Language.—Its Remarkable Regularity and Copiousness.—E
Given.—Reflections.—How Apaches are Named.—Apache Beautie
inclination to tell their Apache Names.

Elsewhere it has been stated that my vocabula
the Apache language had been forwarded to the S
sonian Institute through Gen. Carleton, and that i
been handed to Professor George Gibbs for the pu
of being incorporated in his forthcoming work on
nology. As it was the only copy in my possessi
am compelled to rely solely on memory for the ver
satisfactory skeleton I am able to offer in this cha
It will, however, serve to convince the reader of th
perior intelligence of the Apache Indians as comp
with nearly all other tribes of American savages, wh
places them at the head of races purely nomadic.

Many of the African, Australian, North and S
American tribes, and those who inhabit the Pacific
anica, together with several of Asia, cannot count be
ten, but the Apaches count ten thousand with as r
regularity as we do. They even make use of the dec
sequences. With us the number one has no correla
It is unique in expression as well as in meaning;
when we come to two, we say two, twelve, twenty,
hundred; with the numeral three for a starter, we
thirteen, thirty, three hundred; and again, four, f
teen, forty, four hundred, and so on up to ten, whe
process is repeated by referring to the same root num

from which the higher number derive
manner the Apaches use a unique wo
and another to mention eleven; but
rived from the root name of the nu
and ten. This will be seen from the
their numerals: One is called *tash-a*
three, *kah-yay;* four, *tin-yay;* five, *as*
ay; seven, *host-ee-day;* eight, *hah-p*
ten, *go-nay-nan-ay.* But on arriving
an entirely different word, and say *kl*
never occurs again, either in part or
reach eleven hundred, which is *kla*
twelve is to be expressed recourse i
or two, which is then enlarged into
like manner thirteen is derived from
becomes *kah-yay-sah-tah.* After te
numbers are named as follows: Ele
twelve, *nah-kee-sah-tah;* thirteen, *k*
teen, *tin-sah-tah-hay;* fifteen, *ashl-lay-*
host-kon-sah-tah-hay; seventeen, *host-*
teen, *sam-pee-sah-tah-hay;* nineteen,
twenty, *nah-tin-yay.* It will be obs
teen the aspirated syllable *hay* is a
the sake of euphony, as well as the
eight, to *sam-pee* in eighteen. It w
that *nah-tin-yay,* twenty, receives its
kee-sah-tah, twelve, from *nah-kee,* tw
larly observed in the following nu
thirty is called *kah-tin-yay;* forty, *ti*
tin-yay; sixty, *host-kon-tin-yay;* sev
eighty, *sam-pee-tin-yay*; ninety, *e*
hundred, *too-ooh,* after which come
hundred; *kah-yay-too-ooh,* three hu
thousand, which is expressed by

ts name. In like
l to express one,
l the rest are de-
bers between one
ubjoined table of
ay; two, *nah-kee;*
lay; six, *host-kon-*
nine, *en-gost-ay;*
t eleven they use
-ah-tah-hay, which
whole, until they
at-too-ooh. When
ad to the *nah-kee,*
h-kee-sah-tah. In
ah-yay, three, and
ntil twenty their
n, *klats-ah-tah-hay;*
-yay-sah-tah; four-
h-tah-hay; sixteen,
-sah-tah-hay; eigh-
gost-ee-sah-tah-hay;
ed that after four-
ed, and this is for
ange from *hah-pee,*
l also be observed
erivation, like *nah-*
; and this is regu-
ers: For instance,
-tin-yay; fifty, *asht-*
ty, *host-ee-tin-yay;*
ost-ee-tin-yay; one
ah-kee-too-ooh, two
red, etc., until one
nay-nan-too-ooh, or

---

ten hundred; two thousand is termed *nah-kee-g*
nan-too-ooh, etc.

Here we have evidence sufficient to prove th
Apaches must have possessed objects of sufficien
portance and numbers to have compelled the creat
terms by which the number could be indicated. I
absence of any other object furnished by the region
inhabit, it is fairly presumable that the numerical str
of their race was the impelling cause.

Their verbs express the past, present and future
much regularity, and have the infinitive, indicative
junctive and imperative moods, together with the
second and third persons, and the singular, dua
plural numbers. Many of them are very irregular
depend upon auxiliaries which are few. In all th
lates to special individuality the language is exa
thus, *shee* means I or me; but *shee-dah* means I m
or me myself; *dee* means thee or thou; but *dee-dah* m
you yourself especially and personally, without refe
to any other being. When an Apache is relatin
own personal adventures he never says *shee,* for
cause that word, in some sense, includes all who
present and took any part in the affair; but he use
word *shee-dah,* to show that the act was wholly his
The pronouns are: *Shee*—I; *shee-dah*—I myself;
thee or thou; *dee-dah*—thee thyself; *aghan*—it, he,
or they. The word *to-dah* means no, and all their a
atives are negatived by dividing this word so as to
the first syllable in front and the second in the re
the verb to be negatived. For example, *ink-tah* m
sit down, but to say, do *not* sit down, we must expr
to-ink-tah-dah; nuest-chee-shee, come here; *to-nuest-*
shee-dah, do *not* come here; *anah-zont-tee,* begone
anah-zont-tee-dah, do *not* begone, and so on throug
the language.

The word *tats-an* means dead in A
employ it when speaking of a dead
that he is *yah-ik-tee*, which means th
that he is wanting. If one goes t
and inquires for him during his a
answered that he is *yah-ik-tee*, or g
usage, while speaking of their dece
much due to delicacy and regret fo
superstitious fears of the dead, for
plicit belief in ghosts and spirits, a
trace the causes for their credence
animal destroyed in the chase, so s
is given they exclaim, *yah-tats-an*,
it should only be wounded, and ri
tats-an-see-dah, it is *not* dead.

Whenever an object is shown th
they adopt its Spanish name which
with their favorite guttural, *hay*.
no difference between the values
silver, copper, brass or gold. T
pesh, and the several metals were
colors. Silver was called *pesh-li*
gold, *pesh-klitso*, or yellow iron;
difference in their values and u
Spanish terms, and silver became *p*
to *oro-hay*, and brass was suffered
tion of *pesh-klitso*, or yellow iron.

As the Apaches build no hous
more than a week in any one loca
temporary abode receives its name
which means fire; so that to ex
twigs tied together for shelter,
hay, meaning fire-place. Many c
entirely upon their accent for ind

Apache; but they never
d friend, but say of him
that he is not present—
to an Apache's camp,
absence, the visitor is
gone somewhere. This
ceased friends, is not so
for their loss as to their
r they entertain an im-
, although I could never
ce. In alluding to an
soon as the mortal blow
, now it is dead; but if
rise again, it is said, *to-*

hem for the first time,
ch is made to terminate
. Formerly they knew
es or qualities of iron,
Their name for iron is
distinguished by their
lickoyee, or white iron;
but after learning the
uses, they adopted the
plata-hay, gold changed
ed to retain the appella-

ases, and rarely remain
ality, the place of their
ne from their word *kunh*,
xpress a camp, or a few
we must say *kunh-gan-*
of their words depend
ndividuality of meaning.

Kah is the word for an arrow, and also
when the latter is intended, it is ne
strongly aspirated sound to the *k*, ro
throat with marked expression. The
means afar off, a long way; but if the s
convey the idea of great distance, he
and dwell upon the last syllable, an
word *ah-han-d-a-y*. The word *schlanh*
good deal; but to represent a great d
large quantity, we must say *schlan-go*,
on the last syllable.

As it is not contemplated to insert th
ulary in this work, the foregoing illust
fice to convince the reader that for
nomadic, their language is in advance
spoken by uncivilized races residing in
gaged in semi-pastoral and agricultural

Apache warriors take their names fro
trait of character, personal conformatio
act. Until one of these features be de
extent as to be prominent, the youth i
nay, a boy. The women are named in
as they are deemed altogether inferio
are without particular designation, but
spoken of as *ish-tia-nay*, or woman. Th
of the more eminent warriors on the For
vation will convey the best idea of this
were *Gian-nah-tah*, which means "Alw
was admirably descriptive of the man's
name given him by the Mexicans was
came *Nah-tanh*, or the "Corn Flower,"
having on one occasion, while on a raid
pletely hidden himself and party in a fi
the large town of Ures, and succeeded

two or three hundred head of h
he received a kick on the nose
animals, which had the effect
over a considerable portion of
countenance. From this accid
him *El Chato*. A tall, stately
name of *Natch-in-ilk-kisn*, or
which he always wore a thickl
around his throat, and bracelet
yen means the "Keen Sighted
cause of his wonderful powe
say, the "Strong Swimmer,"
escape from drowning in the
oring to cross it with a band
desperate struggle, in which
lost, he succeeded in reachin
his escape with the rest from
Mexicans, who did not dare
and turbid flood. A quiet,
natured fellow was known as
ing the "Contented." One
sobriquet of *Klo-sen*, or the
lassoed and killed a Comanc
the tribes, with one of those
been expended, and possessin
his slain enemy, *Klo-sen* cont
ning the fight. *Pindah-Lick*
a noted warrior, who got the
usually large amount of whit
flashing pupils of his eyes.
Blanco.

As before remarked, few of
ored with names; but there a
poetical appellations. Amo

rses. On one occasion
om one of the captured
f flattening that feature
s naturally unattractive
nt the Mexicans dubbed
ellow, rejoiced in the
s "Colored Beads," of
worked and stiff collar
on his wrists. *Nah-kah-*
and was so baptized be-
of vision. *Too-ah-yay-*
t his title from a narrow
o Grande, while endeav-
stolen horses. After a
eral of the animals were
the shore and effecting
large pursuing party of
nture into the swollen
sy-tempered and good-
ra-ah-dee-ah-tran, mean-
l sagamore received the
Hair Rope," for having
during a fight between
bestros. His arrows had
himself of the arms of
uted greatly toward win-
ee, or "White Eye," was
ppellation from the un-
around the small, black,
is Mexican title was *Ojo*

he women are ever hon-
some who have decidedly
them was a very bright

and handsome girl of eighteen or ninetee
variably refused all offers of matrimony.
colored, with strictly Grecian features a
small feet and hands. Her eyes were lar
lustrous, while her figure was magnificent
and her carriage redolent with the grace a
the wild girl of the sierras. She was kno
ah-ray, which means the "Morning Sta
likewise indifferent to marriage, was calle
the "Boy," from her tom-boy character an
There was one who received particular ho
other sex, but her Apache name has escape
She was renowned as one of the most de
thieves and horse breakers in the tribe, an
mitted an expedition to go on a raid with
ence. The translation of her Apache
"Dexterous Horse Thief." They do not c
"Apaches," but *Shis-Inday*, or "Men of
probably because their winter quarters
cated amidst the forests which grow upo
far above the plains, and while they afford
ter from the wintry blasts, enable them
that passes in the vales below.

The foregoing names are somewhat
Apache character; so much so, indeed, tha
usual for them to refuse giving their Apach
interrogated; but will endeavor to give s
appellative in its place. Before marriage
much the handsomest and most perfectly f
Indian tribe I have ever seen; but after bea
and performing for three or four years the c
imposed upon them by their husbands, the
and shrivel up, becoming thin, muscular

CHAPTER XXI.

Chastity of Apache Women.—Wantonness of the Navajoes.—Comparison Instituted.—Curious Customs.—A Feast and Dance.—Ceremonies.—Duration of the Feast.—Depilating the Eyes.—Apache Marriages.—Style of Courtship.—Coquetry.—Horses as Money.—The Bower of Love.—Affected Bashfulness.—Apache System of Polygamy.—Customs Regulating Marriage.—Nah-tanh's Views.—Burials.—Funeral Ceremonies.—Apache Reserve.—Small-Pox.—Capt. Shirland.—Fort Davis.—Fight with Apaches.—Indians Whipped.

AMONG those who have enjoyed the best opportunities for judging, the award for female chastity is given to the Apaches. During a period of about two years, when hundreds of them were under our charge, and mingling freely with our troops, not a single case occurred, to the best of my knowledge, wherein an Apache woman surrendered her person to any man outside her tribe. Cases of conjugal infidelity are extremely rare among them, and the girls take no ordinary pride in guarding their purity. The art of coquetry is practiced among them with quite as much zest as among the belles of our cities, and with such delicacy and tact, that the most refined among us might possibly study at a worse school. On the other hand, the Navajoes are extremely loose and sensuous. Although of the main branch of the great Apache tree they differ in tribal organization, in their manufacture of superb blankets, in their courage and address, and in the fact that they keep large flocks of sheep, and cultivate the earth. In all other respects they are pure Apaches. Female virtue is little regarded among them, but is deemed of primary importance among the Apaches proper. When an Apache girl has reached the second year of her puberty the fact is widely circulated, and all present are invited to a grand feast and dance. She is then deemed marriageable and open to the solicitations of the young warriors. On such occasions the girl is dressed in all her finery. Small bells are hung to the skirts of her buckskin robe and along the sides of her high moccasins, which reach the knee. Bits of tinsel are profusely scattered all over her attire, until she is fairly weighed down by the quantity of her ornaments. Meat in abundance is cooked after their fashion, and the guests partake of it *ad libitum*. *Twilt-kah-yee*, an intoxicating beverage, is freely distributed. A dried ox-hide is laid upon the ground, and some of the more noted musicians entertain the company with improvised songs, while others beat time upon the ox-hide with long and tough sticks. The noise of this drumming can be heard for two miles on a clear, calm night. Old warriors meet and recount their exploits; young ones ogle and court the marriageable girls; old women delight in cooking the supper and furnishing it to their hungry applicants. Suddenly a shout is raised, and a number of young men, variously attired in the skins of buffaloes, deer, cougars, bears, and other beasts, each looking as nearly natural as possible, make their appearance, and commence dancing to a regular measure around a huge central fire. The women pretend to be greatly alarmed at this irruption of beasts; the men seize their weapons and brandish them with menacing gestures, to which the human menagerie pays no sort of attention. Finding their efforts to intimidate futile, they lay aside their arms and join in the dance, which is then made more enjoyable by the intermingling of the young girls. In the meantime the one in whose honor all these rejoicings are given, remains isolated in a huge lodge in which are assembled the sagamores and principa warriors of the tribe. She is not allowed to participat in, or even see what is going on outside; but listen patiently to the responsibilities of her marriageable condition. This feast lasts from three to five days, according to the wealth of the girl's father. After it is finishe she is divested of her eyebrows, which is intended to publish the fact that she is in the matrimonial market. A month afterward the eye lashes are pulled out, one b one, until not a hair remains. The reasons for this extraordinary despoliation I have never been able to lear and I doubt much if the Apaches themselves can assig any cause for the act beyond the exactions of custom But this system of depilorizing the brows and eyes is no confined to the women; it is universal among the wa riors, nor could any arguments of mine induce them t forego the practice. It probably arose from a desire t look unlike any other people, and to add to their fer ciousness of aspect.

Marriage among the Apaches also has its singula ities, and is not unworthy of special mention. The gir are wholly free in their choice of husbands. Paren never attempt to impose suitors upon their acceptanc and the natural coquetry of the sought-for bride is a lowed full scope. These are their halcyon days, fo after marriage "comes the deluge." Any amount o ogling, sly pressing of hands, stolen interviews, etc is gone through with, just the same as with us, unt the suitor believes his "game made," when he procee to test his actual standing, which is invariably do as follows: In the night time he stakes his horse i front of her roost, house, hovel, encampment, bivoua or whatever a few slender branches, with their butt en in the ground and their tops bound together, may be termed. The lover then retires and awaits the issue. Should the girl favor the suitor, his horse is taken by her, led to water, fed, and secured in front of his lodge; but should she decline the proffered honor, she will pay no attention to the suffering steed. Four days comprise the term allowed her for an answer in the manner related. A ready acceptance is apt to be criticised with some severity, while a tardy one is regarded as the extreme of coquetry. Scarcely any of them will lead the horse to water before the second day, as a hasty performance of that act would indicate an unusual desire to be married; nor will any suffer the fourth day to arrive without furnishing the poor animal with its requisite food and drink, provided they intend to accept the suitor, for such a course would render them liable to the charge of excessive vanity.

With us the possession of gold and silver indicates the enjoyment of wealth. Gold and silver are the recognized mediums of exchange for goods, and are called money; but with the Apaches a horse is money, and the value of any article is regulated by the number of horses which it may bring. Of course, the animal must be sound, and not over ten years of age, and no farrier among us is more skillful in these matters than they.

The lover, having been accepted, it becomes his duty to determine how many horses her parents are willing to receive for their daughter, it being mutually understood that the animals are given as a recompense for her services to the family. In exact proportion to the number of horses given, her worth and attractiveness are exalted. If a girl is sold for one animal, no matter how good, she is deemed of little account—quite plebeian, and by no means of the *bon ton*—by the rest of those present, and

I am not so sure that our expression, "a one-hor
fair," did not take its rise from this Apache syst
graduated values.

On the third night of the feastings and junketin
cident to the marriage, the bride and bridegroom
denly disappear. During the whole of the time
tioned, they have been constantly in the presence
sachems and wise squaws of the tribe, and are nev
mitted to even speak with each other. But love
more watchful than precaution, and when the old
are overcome by drowsiness, incident upon long
fulness and frequent potations, the young couple
age to make their escape, usually with the conniva
their seniors, who pretend to be quite innocent
matter.

Several days prior to his marriage the bridegro
lects some beautiful and retired spot, from three
miles from the main camp, and there he erects
the shelters already described, but festooned wit
flowers, and generally embowered among the tree
place difficult to discover. Thither he retreats wi
bride, a sufficiency of provision having been laid
last them a week or ten days, and there they ta
their temporary abode. Their absence is expecte
re-appearance creates no visible recognition, a
deemed indelicate to make any open demonstrati
such occasions. The young bride assumes the a
pretenses of extraordinary modesty, and in the ev
meeting one of her former associates, invariably
her back or hides her face, and puts on all the
of an American girl of twenty years ago—not
days—when accused of having a lover.

In a week this seeming bashfulness gives place
regular and arduous duties of the Apache wife, a

life of toil and slavish suffering commences. The warrior may at any time repudiate his conjugal companion, and her chances for a second marriage consist in her reputation as a good worker, or for her personal attractions. In either case, she experiences no difficulty in obtaining a second, and even a third or fourth husband, but her market depends upon her prominence in these respects. Should there be any children, it becomes the reputed father's duty to provide for their support, and he, in turn, imposes that responsibility upon his other wives. The women are by no means averse to sharing the affections of their lords with other wives, as the increased number lessens the work for each individual, but the place of honor is always assigned to the one who was the first married, irrespective of age.

The custom of polygamy was not always in vogue among the Apaches. A celebrated warrior, and one wise in the traditions of his people, told me that time was when only one woman was deemed the proper share of one man, but their losses by war, and other causes, had so reduced the number of the males that it was judged politic to make a change in this custom. He further added, that he thought degeneracy had been produced by its adoption, and that the individuals of the tribe had become more alienated from each other. He rejoiced in but one wife with whom he had lived twenty years, and although she had fallen into the "sere and yellow leaf," he preferred her to all the young and more attractive women. She had borne him two fine sons and a daughter, all of whom were alive and well, and she possessed the experience requisite to make him a contented husband. His oldest son was a warrior, and his father's best friend and associate. He deprecated the system of polygamy, and thought that it would eventu-

ally emasculate and destroy the indepen
tribe. This was Nah-tanh, and his views w
onded by Klo-sen, and several others, bu
not hold their own against the practices of C
Natch-in-ilk-kisn, and other prominent an
tious men. These recitals will serve to s
Apaches, although the most nomadic, sa
tamed of all races, have nevertheless ponde
of the most abstruse and perplexing social
the highest civilized races.

In respect to burials I could never succe
ering but very little, and that little not at
factory character. On this point they a
unapproachable, and invariably succeeded i
scheme I planned for a more thorough kno
subject. It is certain that they abhor cr
resort to interment, and their burials are a
at night only by a few selected warriors. I
to believe that their dead are conveyed to t
venient height, and deposited in the groun
taken to so shroud their bodies with stones
the wolves and coyotes from digging them
lating their remains. Everything of which
died possessed is scrupulously placed in th
with what ceremonies, and under what o
have never been able to discover. The de
rior provokes an excessive demonstration
general sense of serious loss; the death of s
most unnoticed, except by her intimate frie
sonal female relatives. Whatever external
they may practice among themselves when
absolute independence and freedom, were
ited in presence of others while under the
subjection and obedience to our dictates,

dence of his
vere fully sec-
it they could
Gian-nah-tah,
d more licen-
how that the
vage and un-
red over some
problems of

ed in discov-
all of a satis-
re absolutely
n foiling any
vledge on the
rmation, and
ll performed
I have reason
he most con-
d, care being
as to prevent
up and muti-
the defunct
he grave, but
bservances, I
nise of a war-
of woe and
squaw is al-
nds and per-
signs of grief
in a state of
never exhib-
restraints of
and opportu-

nity to witness them at other times was at no time vouc
safed to me or any other person I ever met. It has nev
been within my power to solve the reasons for this e
treme caution; and all my inquiries failed to unlock t
doors of Apache reticence on this subject. The near
definition I ever arrived at was given me by old Klo-s
the same who instituted so many questions in referen
to the earth's sphericity, the formation of clouds, t
causes for rain, etc.

This reflecting and experienced warrior told me th
the reason why they buried all the worldly goods of de
people with their bodies, was because of a strange dise
which broke out among them several years before he w
born, and carried off great numbers. It was found th
to use the clothing or household property of the d
ceased, or to come in contact with such person, was a
most certain to result in a like sickness to the individu
doing these things, and that the rule was adopted t
bury with him or her every single thing that the defun
possessed at the time of death, and all that he or s
might have used or touched before that event. But
strictly forbore from telling me anything more, althoug
I made every effort to draw him out. It occurred to n
that the disease alluded to was the small-pox, for the
were plenty of evidences that it had raged among t
Apaches in some past period. That they know wh
this disease is, and comprehend its nature, to some e
tent, can be exemplified by the following incidents:

Gen. Carleton dispatched Capt. E. D. Shirland and h
company, C of the First California Cavalry Voluntee
to retake Fort Davis, in Texas. Upon Shirland's arriv
he found the fort deserted by the Confederates; but al
discovered that they had left three men behind who h
been seized with small-pox. Those poor fellows we

abandoned to their fate; but the Conf
scarcely left the place before the Ap
with their usual caution they made
before trusting themselves into the
course of their investigations they di
sick men, and recognizing the diseas
were afflicted, filled their bodies full o
between the iron bars of the window
tempting to enter the fortress, went o
their own fastnesses. A few days af
at the head of twenty-five men, enco
hundred of those same Apaches at th
"Dead Man's Hole," and killed tw
without sustaining any other loss tha
carbine.

ederate troops had
ches arrived, and
careful inspection
building. In the
scovered the three
with which they
f arrows shot from
s; and without at-
n their way toward
erward, Shirland,
untered over two
e place known as
nty-two of them
n that of a single

CHAPTER XXII.

Apaches as Warriors.—Fight with the Maricopas.—Fight with the Comanche
Cold Weather.—Apache Camp Attacked by Hostile Navajoes.—Nava
Pursued and Destroyed.—Animals Recovered.—Carillo and the Navaj
McGrew and Porter.—Their Gallantry.—Apache Ideas of Scalping.—Gr
Apache Parade.—Strange Request.—Denied.—Purification of Arms.—
Prophet again Making Trouble.—Apache Cavalry Manœuvres.—Reflecti

SEVERAL fine opportunities were vouchsafed me to jud
of the Apaches as warriors, when compared with oth
tribes. Some ten or twelve of them made a daring r
on the westernmost Maricopa village, just at a time wh
I was passing with my company. The Maricopas a
Pimos armed themselves in great numbers, and hurri
out to punish the invaders who had sought refuge in
dense chaparal, just at the foot of the mountain ran
which creates the Great Gila Bend. Thither they we
pursued and invested on three sides. The conflict waxe
warm, and several of the allies were wounded; but n
an Apache could be seen. The brush was riddled wi
balls, and after a short council of war, it was assaulte
in great force, but their wily enemies had managed
make their escape without the loss of a man.

A gentleman of New Mexico told me that he once wi
nessed a fight between eighty Apaches and one hundre
and fifty Comanches, in which the former gained a de
cided victory. The contest was entirely on horseback
and the parties were equally armed. It occurred on th
plain known as the Llano Estacado, or "Staked Plain,
east of the Pecos river. Exhibitions of rare skill i

horsemanship occurred during
admirable to behold.

In January, 1864, the weat
very cold, Fahrenheit's thermo
below zero at eight o'clock in th
under our care were then enc
south of the fort, on the eas
They possessed quite a numbe
sisted their whole wealth. C
o'clock, Major Whalen was r
informed him that a deputation
earnestly desirous of making s
audience was immediately gra
formed the commanding office
been visited by a large band of
their stock driven off. They
their animals. It happened th
company—the only cavalry fo
sent on a scout at the time, a
mained with some of the most
to the company. Nevertheles
ately ordered to saddle up an
command of Lieut. Newbold, w
States Infantry, under the co
was ordered to follow the caval
forces were assisted by twenty-
der the conduct of Gian-nah-ta
number the Apaches could mou
The trail led due south, and a
morning the cavalry and Apach
ing Navajoes, who were all on f
on the animals stolen from t
numbered about one hundred a
sixty were mounted. So soon

this conflict which were

her at Fort Sumner was
ometer being ten degrees
e morning. The Apaches
amped about three miles
tern bank of the Pecos.
r of horses, in which con-
One night, about twelve
oused by the guard, who
of Apaches were present,
ome communication. An
ated, and the Apaches in-
that their camp had just
marauding Navajoes, and
came for aid to recover
at nearly the whole of my
rce at the fort—were ab-
ad only about twelve re-
used-up horses belonging
s, the men were immedi-
d place themselves under
while a company of United
mmand of Capt. Bristol,
ry with all speed. These
five Apache warriors, un-
h, that being the greatest
nt since the Navajo raid.
bout seven o'clock in the
es came upon the retreat-
oot except those mounted
he Apaches. The band
nd eighty, of whom about
as their pursuers came

into view they halted, formed, and prepared
Newbold and his small party of twelve cavalry
twenty-five Apaches advanced rapidly toward
joes until within eighty yards, when the latte
fire all along their line. This was answered by
delivered volley from a dozen carbines, which
over nine Navajoes at the first fire. The weath
extremely cold that although the men found no
in recharging their breech-loading carbines,
could not place the caps upon the nipples, the
were so benumbed. Fortunately, the Navajoe
the same dilemma. The order to draw pistols ar
was given, and the allies went down among the
like a small tornado. In less than ten minu
line was broken, and the enemy in full retreat.

The Apaches had likewise abandoned the use
rifles, and betook themselves to their bows and
and lances. The retreat soon became a rou
trooper had two first-class Colt's six-shooters,
them with terrific effect. The moment a Navaj
was pierced full of arrows by the Apaches, an
suffered to rise again. The whites took the
their savage allies seconded them with great
and undaunted gallantry. For an engagement
so few were present, the slaughter was terrific.
than ninety Navajoes were stretched dead u
ground, and so many others wounded that som
party who afterward surrendered and placed the
upon the Reservation, informed me that only t
the whole Navajo force ever arrived safely in the
try. In this very remarkable engagement, neit
troops nor the Apaches lost man nor horse. S
of the stolen animals were recovered and res
their owners.

It subsequently appear
greatly incensed at the Ap
having surrendered themse
ful understanding with the
been undertaken in reveng
Our allies were highly elat
conceived a more positive
prowess of Californian cav
ways entertained a high re
some dread. As I was ab
mainder of my company, I
but arrived at the fort the
heard the same reports fro
the battle-field, only fifteen
the number of slain Navajo
tion of the survivors corrob
victorious parties.

Among the assailants we
Agent, and a man named C
Indian farm at Fort Sum
eminently courageous, and
Carillo had been a captive
before, and spoke their
Apaches, with tolerable flu
hailed a retreating Navajo,
surrender. I do not wish t
bers of your people in our
selves up, and are now livin
plenty to eat." The Navajo
as well as you? If you can
try to kill you. Surrender
sponse Carillo raised his ri
ounce ball through his foe;
at considerable speed, until

ed that the Navajoes were
paches on the Reservation for
elves, and entered into peace-
Americans, and the raid had
ge for this apparent perfidy.
ted at their triumph, and also
idea of the gallantry and
valry, for whom they had al-
espect, coupled with a whole-
sent on a scout with the re-
I took no part in this affair,
day after its occurrence, and
m all concerned. A visit to
n miles off, satisfied me as to
joes, and the subsequent rela-
borated the narratives of the

ere Mr. Labadie, the Indian
Carillo, the *major-domo* of the
ner. Both these men were
both did splendid service.
among the Navajoes, years
language, the same as the
uency. During the fight he
and said to him: "Halt, and
to kill you. Here are num-
camp, who have given them-
ng in peace and comfort, with
o replied: "Am I not a man
kill me do so; if not, I will
I never will." At this re-
ifle and fired, putting a half
but the fellow staggered on
l his rifle was reloaded, when

---

he whirled about and let fly at Carillo,
in close proximity to his head. Havin
rifle, Carillo again cried out: "Did I n
you now halt or must I shoot you again
made no other answer than to again ra
shoot at Carillo, who, being untouched,
through his foe. This second shot broug
when he sat down, and throwing awa
menced to use his bow and arrows. At
soldier rode up and sped a six-shooter b
Indian's breast, which did not kill him,
fect of distracting his attention from Car
round behind the savage, and seizing h
plunged a large bowie-knife in his heart
death agony this warrior said to his sl
nada, meaning, "you are good for noth
cident, and another related elsewhere,
extreme tenacity of life possessed by th
Navajoes, and I doubt not, by most of ou
ages. This engagement was signalized
valor and cool courage on the part of ou
McGrew and Porter followed the retrea
ten miles, killing fifteen more of them.
self slew no less than thirteen Navajoes

It may as well be mentioned here, th
do not scalp all their enemies. After a
gagement they will select one or two sca
formance of a ceremony somewhat allie
dance" of other tribes, but in most resp
ferent. With them it is a strictly relig
growing out of their superstitions; whi
races it is observed as a grand rejoicin
jubilee. Four days after the fight abo
Apaches were observed to be dressed i

finery. About eighty of their most noted warriors we mounted, and each was armed with a lance, from whi streamed a small red pennon. Every member of th party was enveloped in a red blanket, given by the Go ernment a short time previous, and they were formed i close column of twenty men front and four ranks dee After going through a variety of manœuvres, they ro directly toward the fort, and halted a few yards in fro of the commandant's residence. That officer, Maj Whalen, requested me to inquire into their wishe which I did, and was answered by Gian-nah-tah th they desired permission to visit the field of the late batt for the purpose of obtaining a Navajo scalp, in order t perform some religious rites imposed upon them by the prophet, who, by the by, was the same wily rascal th had attempted to lead them astray by his pretende vision of the black cloud. To this request Major Whale bade me reply, that it was entirely impossible to acced that they had behaved like brave men during the figh and that they should not tarnish their gallant deeds b acts of intense barbarism. He further added, that thei enemies, being defunct, were past all sensation, and th stripping them of their scalps was an act of atrociou cowardice, of which he had not believed his Apach friends susceptible. He had given them credit for gallantry; but if they persisted in their demand, he, an all of us, would be coerced into the conviction that the were not animated by true courage. He would, therefore, forbid them from visiting the battle ground for th purpose named.

This reply evoked the extreme anger of the prophet who immediately informed the band that, unless th ceremony took place, they and their people would b visited with the vengeance of the Great Spirit. At thi they became much excited, and reiterated their request, stating that but one scalp was required to fulfill their obligations to the Most High. Major Whalen remained immovable, and gave me orders to get my company in readiness immediately to frustrate any such attempt on the part of the Apaches, at the same time instructing me to inform them of this order. They heard me through with Indian patience, and then, with undisguised expressions of hate against the commanding officer, rode down the river in solid square until they arrived at a point about three miles below the fort, where the ceremonies, I am about to relate, were solemnized.

My company had been got ready, pursuant to order; but were kept in waiting, at the fort, until it should become certain that the Apaches were determined to visit the battle ground. Accompanied by two chosen men I kept about four hundred yards in their rear, but never intruded upon their privacy. Having reached a point where the bank of the Pecos descended gradually toward the stream—a very rare occurrence in that river—they wheeled to the right, and having reached the water, formed line, the right toward the south, while the prophet, dismounting from his horse, entered the stream, about knee deep, and commenced a series of incantations, the warriors preserving profound silence. Having performed the rite of ablution upon his own person and arms, he proceeded to the warrior at the southernmost end of the line, and received from him the weapons he had used in the fight above mentioned. The lance blade, the knife and the arrow heads were bathed in the stream, and then dried with a cloth, after which they were pointed upward, and the prophet, with a strong expiration, blew upon their respective blades, beginning at the hilts and ending at the points, at the same time muttering a series

of incantations, accompanied by the groans and appa
contrition of the owner of the weapons. This syste
purgation was gone through with every warrior pre
who had been in the conflict. When the ceremony c
to an end the band separated into four distinct part
and went through a sort of sham fight, which lasted
an hour. They then reformed in the order they c
and returned peaceably to camp.

I subsequently inquired of several of their more pr
inent men the objects contemplated in these ceremoni
and was told that the spirits of the dead would ha
them unless wafted away by the breath of the proph
The blood shed by them was supposed to be washed
only by the power of their medicine man; but the gho
of the slain were laid by blowing them away from
weapons by which they had died. This power was ves
solely in the prophet, but the ceremony was incomple
because they had no scalp. It was necessary to h
one, from which each warrior should take a few ha
and burn them, in order that the fumes might purify
atmosphere of the battle ground and prevent it fr
being pestilential to the Apaches. Having been deni
the privilege by Maj. Whalen, they could no more hu
in the direction of the field where the Navajoes h
fallen without jeopardizing their personal safety, eith
from disease or other causes.

This incident confirmed my opinions in regard to t
superstitious ideas of the Apaches, and induced me
make many inquiries on the subject, but they were ne
advanced as if from mere motives of curiosity, but rath
as being desirous to learn something which might
beneficial. On no occasion did I ever permit myself
intrude an innate sense of American superiority o
their savage ignorance, but approached them as a seek

after knowledge which they alone could impart. This course flattered their vanity and opened to me sources of information which I might otherwise have sought in vain. Nothing was lost by this seeming dependence. They knew as well as I that they were no match for Americans, but nothing could bring them to confess the fact. They perfectly understood and appreciated the difference between us, but it was beyond human nature to think that they would acknowledge that difference. That an American officer, placed in charge of their camp, should seek information from them—should endeavor to comprehend their laws, nature, habits, language, manners, religion, and other ceremonies—was something so new and unexpected, that they involuntarily opened their hearts and laid them comparatively bare, but never for a moment did they forget to exercise caution and reserve, even while accepting these advances. They invariably apply a test of acts, and refuse to put faith in words which are systematically used by them to cover their designs; but the ordeal passed, they are prepared to give limited credence to promises.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Ojo Blanco Wounded.—Apache Doctoring.—Dr. Gwyther's Treat
—Ojo Blanco Killed in Battle.—Religious Creed of the Apa
their Religion. — The Deluge. — Apaches Ignorant of their
Ideas in Reference to Women. — Mexican Women as Wive
Character of their Children.—Horrible Spectacle in Cooke's
Suggestions.—Their Respect for Traditions Upset.

One day, while conversing with Dr. Gwyt
mation was brought us from the Apache cam
Blanco had been desperately wounded in
quarrel with another Apache. We immedi
ceeded to the camp, where I arrested the as
sent him to the guard house, while the Doc
the wounded man, where I soon joined him. O
or Pin-dah-lickoyee, meaning the "White
surrounded by a dozen or more of his mournin
ances, who were keeping up a concerted how
in obedience to the directions of their prop
Doctor, seeing that perfect repose and quiet
pensable to the patient, requested me to order
away, with instructions not to return. To ru
through the traditions of their tribe and sup
set aside the dictates of their "great medici
delicate task, so I directed the orderly in atte
send me, from my company, ten well armed
mounted soldiers, with a Sergeant and a Cor
fifteen minutes the Sergeant reported and req
orders, which were to keep vigilant guard ove
tered cabin of Ojo Blanco, and under no prete

low an Apache to enter, or permit one to make a noise in the vicinity, but to admit only the hospital nurse who would be sent to tend on the wounded man. Having given these orders, and seen the guard properly disposed, I told the Apache mourners to quit the place, and not to come back until permitted by the doctor. They had noticed the arrival of the troops, and knew that something unusual was brewing, and when this mandate was given them they left, very reluctantly and with sad foreboding, but quietly and in order. In a few days Ojo Blanco gave evidence of improved condition, and his former mourners were admitted to see him, but commanded to make no unusual demonstration. Three weeks subsequently the wounded man was again walking around the camp, an object of wonder to his people.

The reasons for these extraordinary precautions arose from the fact that the injured person was one of the most celebrated warriors of his tribe, and exercised very great influence. His was also the first case of the kind that had come under our cognizance; moreover, I suspected that the rascally prophet would use his death, had it occurred, to stir up the dissatisfaction of his people on the Reservation, and induce their fugitive departure, to engage again in their accustomed depredations. It also afforded an opportunity to exhibit the white man's skill and his interest in the Apaches, for Dr. Gwyther, after examining the wound, pronounced it severe, but not necessarily mortal. It will be seen that with proper precaution and judicious nursing, we had the whole thing in our hands, with the opportunity of further increasing Apache confidence and respect.

It is due to Ojo Blanco to say that his first visit, after his recovery, was paid to Dr. Gwyther and myself, expressing to each his fervent acknowledgments. In less

than six weeks after my recall from
noted warrior fled from the Reservation
accompanied by over two hundred ot
and children. I learned that he was su
in a battle with the Californian Volunt

My conversations with prominent wa
mores on the subject of religion were
protracted. The Apaches believe in th
the soul, but they also place credence
the one of Good and the other of Evil
power is so evenly balanced that it is be
of man to determine which is the grea
ultimate superiority is credited, witho
the Good Spirit, but they modify this
far as we are concerned, by curtailing
interest which the Good Spirit takes in
the Spirit of Evil is represented as being
ful and interested in the affairs of the
The Spirit of Good is in the distant
Spirit of Evil takes part in our daily an
The result is that while they look up to
with extreme reverence and ultimate tru
or usual petitions, are made to the divi
suppose to shape their earthly ends. Th
the excess of barbarism and heathenish
permit me to ask, is there any differe
untutored and savage Apache and the
tianized, civilized, and refined man of th
not the latter put off his worship of Jeho
that of Mammon quite as fully and st
Apache endeavors to conciliate the spi
lieves will yield the most immediate
sponse to his prayers? It is not mine
question; let men's consciences—those
respond for themselves.

The Apaches have no tradition whatever of the flood. They are quite ignorant of their origin, and unhesitatingly state that they have always lived in the same country, and been the same unmixed people. They pride themselves on the purity of their blood, and although they admit that many of their wives have been captured from Mexico, yet they affirm that it is not the woman, but the man, who bequeathes tone, character and speciality to the child. In addition to which they assert that no Mexican woman who has become the wife of an Apache, and remained so until she has borne him children, ever desires to renew her former life. That this last assertion is true, experience has sufficiently proved to my comprehension; but the reasons are clear.

In the first place, there is but a modicum of difference between the actual condition of the women in the northern frontiers of Mexico and that of the Apaches. In each case it is she who does all the work, and undergoes all the servitude to which women are condemned among semi-civilized races. In the second place, after having born children for an Apache her affections are concentrated upon her offspring more than upon the savage author of their birth, and she will not abandon them under almost any circumstances. In the third place, she knows that her restrained and protracted residence among the Apaches would subject her to rude, inhuman and opprobrious comments among her fellow countrywomen—should she return—although their own lives may be the exemplars of all that is vile and prostituted. It is not, therefore, difficult to conceive that the captive Mexican woman, the wife of a noted warrior, should cling to family relations of her own conception, whether forced or not, in preference to those which may have formerly occupied her attention as being natural.

People everywhere, and of all st
accommodate themselves to the circu
they are surrounded, and it is not un
the same privilege to the ignorant, doc
Mexican women of the lower classes.
without sin cast the first stone." Bu
true that from this mixture of races ari
cruel and revengeful of American sav
Apache, after having killed his foe wi
be desecrated and mutilated by his
spring, should such be present. It i
not interfere to prevent such outrag
takes part in it himself, unless influen
excitement; but when he does, he prov
ter spirit, and his treatment is carrie
savage excess. Precisely as the cat or
its young how to catch and tormen
the Apache instruct his disciples. In
and barbarous ignorance, the dead bodi
are mutilated, and left in localities w
to be found, to convey a sense of dread
any innate disposition to deface that w
be insensible to their acts.

Their philosophy and treatment of
tirely different. In such a case their s
thirsty natures experience a real pleasu
their victim. Every expression of
hailed with delight, and the one whose
can devise the most excruciating kind o
worthy of honor. One of the most cru
presented to my gaze occurred in Cool
twenty-eight miles east of the Mimbres
of eight well armed Mexicans, accom
families, and having seven wagons wit

each wagon, were on their way from Sonora to Cal
fornia. They had some money, and expected to conve
their mules and wagons into cash upon their arriva
They had already traversed the more dangerous portio
of the Apache country, and had commenced to felicita
themselves, when they were set upon by nearly two hu
dred savages in Cooke's Cañon. The Mexicans defende
themselves with undaunted courage, which forced th
Apaches to take refuge in their accustomed cunnin
Suddenly ceasing their assault, they informed the Mex
cans that they had no desire to destroy their lives, ad
ing, that the Mexicans could perceive from the superio
numbers of their enemies, and their vantage ground, th
it would be no very difficult task to effect such an objec
had it been contemplated. They then said, that if th
Mexicans would surrender their arms, and give them ha
the number of mules attached to the wagons, they mig
prosecute their journey in peace with the remainde
This proposition was accepted by the inexperienced Me
icans, and so soon as their savage enemies had obtaine
control of their arms, each man was seized, bound to th
wheel of a wagon, head downward, about eighteen inch
from the ground, a fire made under them, and the
brains roasted from their heads. The women and chi
dren were carried off captive, and the train with its co
tents became a prey to the Apaches. As I was the fir
to pass through Cooke's Cañon after this affair, the fu
horror of the torture was rendered terribly distinct. Th
bursted heads, the agonized contortions of the faci
muscles among the dead, and the terrible destiny certa
to attend the living of that ill-fated party, were horrib
depicted on my mind.

It is all very well to argue that the Indian knows
better — that he merely possesses the teachings of h

race, that his cruelties are the re
disposition, etc.; but the real
continue to endure the perpetra
simply because they are committe
is it true policy that intelligent,
be sacrificed, year after year, a
cused on the ground that the m
dians? Is the special plea of th
rian, who knows nothing about
the life-long experiences of othe
more practical and experienced
continue to accept the wild and in
parlor readers on Indian charac
to pay millions annually for the
nicious policy which has heretofor
affairs? The American savage i
right from wrong, and is quite
when he commits a wrong as the
race. If the reader should feel
this point, all he has to do is to
an Apache, and he will very so
that the savage is quite as much
can be.

It is even criminal to contend
guish the full difference betwee
Their dealings with each other,
ward other races, prove that they
almost commensurate in this resp
tem of morals. The capacity to
right and wrong is not the exclusi
tianized people. It obtains with
among barbarians and heathens,
nities could not exist. Whenever
an act of atrocity, he does so with

e results of untaught savage
cal questions are: must we
petration of such atrocities,
mitted by uncivilized beings;
ent, christian people should
ar, and their massacres ex-
e murderers were only In-
of the self-styled humanita-
bout the matter, to set aside
other equally humane but
sed men? Must we forever
nd impracticable theories of
aracter? Can we continue
r the short-sighted and per-
tofore regulated our Indian
ge is no idiot. He knows
ite as cognizant of the fact
the most instructed of our
feel a particle of doubt on
is to commit a wrong upon
y soon become convinced
uch aware of the fact as he

nd that they do not distin-
tween the two qualities.
ner, and their conduct to-
they do, and to an extent
respect with our own sys-
y to discriminate between
clusive property of chris-
with almost equal force
ens, for otherwise commu-
ever the Apache commits
with design and intention,

and not from any ignorance as to whether
or bad deed. He knows all about that as w
had attended Sunday School all his life; b
with an object—a purpose—which his unt
cannot perceive the effect of when weighed in
of the instructed in letters. When an Apac
the dead body of his enemy, he knows that
a wrong and cowardly act; but he persists
because he judges us from his stand-point, a
that sight of the mutilated corpse will prod
the beholders. He has not arrived at that a
formation which would instruct him that
anger, with a determination for redress at
opportunity, are engendered instead of d
the rest of mankind, he is apt to measure o
corn by his own bushel.

In respect to traditions they are very te
an incident occurred, when I enjoyed a favo
tunity, to demonstrate the utter uselessne
upon such testimony. After having acquir
guage, the idea suggested itself that it wo
policy to make them an address in the Ap
To this end I composed a short oration, an
tain of the terms used and the pronuncia
moned Gian-nah-tah, Nah-tanh and Klo-ser
read my speech, requesting them to make t
corrections, which they did with undisguis
Having everything exactly right, a meeting
ing Apache warriors was convoked at my c
my address in their own language. It ca
understood that such an extraordinary an
insured a full gathering of the invited w
after some preliminary ceremonies, I read
which was listened to with earnest attent

particular pains to impr
remembering what I sai
mand from them a repet
in a few days from that
to convey the substanc
were not present, as I in
the value of oral traditi
collected Gian-nah-tah,
two other leading men,
rately, I asked him to re
casion referred to above.
stating the tenor of my r
erroneous versions; but w
parties who had receive
those who had heard it,
own offspring. Having
statements, I again read
was immediately acknowl

Now, said I, you can c
your traditions. If you c
days, the substance of so
comes so mangled by bein
that its original meanin
faith can be placed in th
came down to you throug
question, enforced as it h
was unanswerable, and it
out the difference betwee
This paper, I said, holdi
speech, will remain for ge
and should it be preserve
read, at the expiration of t
just heard it read.

My hearers were wonder

ress them with the importance of
id, as it was my intention to de-
ition of my words, or their tenor,
time. They were also requested
e of my remarks to those who
ntended to investigate for myself
ion. Three days subsequently I
Klo-sen, Nah-tanh, and one or
and taking each one aside sepa-
epeat what I had said on the oc-
. Some of them came very near
remarks, while others gave very
when it came to questioning the
d my speech second-hand from
I could scarcely recognize my
listened carefully to all their
the original production, which
ledged as genuine.
omprehend the unreliability of
annot remember, for even three
short an address, and if it be-
ing related from one to another
g is entirely perverted, what
hose traditions which you say
h so many generations? This
ad been by a notable example,
t was followed up by pointing
en oral and written tradition.
ing up the manuscript of my
nerations exactly as it is now,
d for a thousand years, it will
hat time, precisely as you have

rfully impressed with the truth

of these words; but when I endeavored t
with the necessity of learning to read and
they might be able to create written hi
accord they refused, on the ground that it
consequently degrading. This abhorrenc
rooted in their minds as to be a part of th
no efforts of ours can remove it. Wherev
child has been taken captive, and convert
ant or domestic, it is only by extreme p
they can be restrained from running off
vagabond life, and, if possible, rejoining
of their tribe.

Among those who were present at the ab
reading was the wife of Para-dee-ah-tran
the daughter of Gian-nah-tah. This w
special mention. Even in the most elev
refined society it would be difficult to
possessed more grace, dignity and elega
She was above the medium height, and of
plexion, although a full blooded Apache.
and posture was replete with modesty an
sense. She was always well and comely c
indulged in the tawdry finery and tinsel
by other Apache women. Her figure was
metrical; her hair long, black and glossy
to grow without being subjected to the p
ting even with the eye-brows, which had
plucked out. It was parted in the middle,
away from the brow with as much taste
hibited by any of our ladies. Her eyes w
black and lustrous, with a decided modesty

This woman was the pet of her tribe,
characteristics in harmony with her exteri
She was never permitted to perform hard

hands were delicately small and well formed. She was several times invited, with her husband and father, to dine with the officers, by whom she was much respected, and invariably conducted herself with an ease and dignified propriety which astonished her hosts. Her Indian name has escaped my memory, but its definition in English is the "Stately One." It must, however, be borne in mind that hers was a solitary exception, and so considered by all of her own people. There were many very handsome young girls among them, but none like the "Stately," who, instead of being an object of envy, possessed their unbounded admiration and respect.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Apache Endurance.—Inroad.—Extensive Traveling.—Wild Horses.—El Cupido.—Passes in New Mexico.—Heavy Snow.—Cold Weather.—Change Base.—Indians Break Cover.—Continued Snow-storm.—Go in Pursuit.—Rough Ride.—Indians Overtaken by Mr. Labadie.—Navajoes Whipped and Plunder Recovered.—Overtake and Protect Labadie.—Hunt for Navajoes.—Labadie Arrives Safely at Fort Sumner.—Conchas Springs.—Intense Cold.—Indians' Indifference to Cold.—Apache Method of Burning Sheep.—Great Distances Accomplished.

ALLUSION has been made to the wonderful endurance of the Apache race, and it now remains to give some proofs of the fact.

Having received orders to make a scout of not less than thirty days duration, I sallied out with thirty-four men in December, 1863. Having learned that a large band of Navajoes and Apaches had crossed the Rio Grande and invaded New Mexico, where they had subdivided into small parties of eight and ten each, in order to carry on their operations with more security, and devastate a greater range of country, it became necessary to wait until the scattered companies had reassembled, and were about to leave the Territory with their plunder before operations presenting any decisive result could be inaugurated with reasonable hope of success. It was known that the district upon which they had entered offered only two direct modes of egress, one or both of which must be selected, or the band would be compelled to make a circuit of twelve hundred miles before regaining home, and a considerable portion of this extensive march was to be passed over the Llano Estacado, which was frequently favored with the presence of Comanc war parties, from whom no favor could be expected any terms. Instead, then, of pursuing the scatter fragments of the invaders, our march was directed ward a point from which the two passes, that of t Alamo Gordo Viejo, and that of the Pajaro, could watched, so as to intercept the savages when leavi with their accumulated plunder.

Our guide was the best in the country. He united intimate knowledge of localities with an excellent sen of Indian character, and their modes of operating. T first portion of our march was over an extensive rolli prairie, deeply seamed with gulches, which compell us to make wide *detours*. Several bands of wild hors were met on this excursion, but would bound off wi great speed at our approach. On one occasion, however, a fine herd, headed by a superb black stallio came directly toward us, nor halted until within thirt yards. They threw up their heads, snorted and seeme to regard their visitors with intense curiosity, mingle with doubt and fear. It was strictly forbidden to shoo those animals, whose presence and unexpected proceedings were a source of pleasure and after a good surve of some five or six minutes, their leader stamped hi hoofs with violence, and being followed by the herd circled our little party several times, and then gallope off with incredible speed and grace of movement. Al these signs were proofs positive that no Indians had bee there for some time, for the introduction of horse-flesh a a delicate article of food is properly due to the Apaches and not the Parisians, although the latter may have refined upon the original system of cooking.

The guide led us to a smooth hill, perfectly free from wood or brush of any sort, but richly covered with th finest grama grass. After ascending this moderate elevation we beheld, just below, and occupying the intermediate vale between it and the next height, a delightful and thick wood, no portion of which could be perceived from any other point except the opposite hill. In the the center of this wood was a never-failing spring of delicious water, easy of access, and immediately adjoining a first-rate camping ground. This spring was aptly named *Cupido*, or Cupid. Here our little party came to an anchor, nearly midway between the two passes already mentioned. The Alamo Gordo Viejo Pass was three miles south, and the Pajaro Pass five miles northwest from the Cupido. Three men were sent to watch each pass, and to give the earliest possible information of the approach of the savages.

The next day, after our arrival, was signalized by a heavy fall of snow, to the depth of eight or nine inches, and this was followed by an almost intense cold, my spirit thermometer showing twenty degrees below zero of Fahrenheit's instrument. Four days previous we were in a region where the same thermometer stood at forty degrees above freezing point, making a difference of ninety-two degrees in the short period mentioned. We had been unconsciously rising to a very elevated position, and had left the region of the cotton-wood and the vine for that of the fir and the cedar. Here we passed the New Year of 1864, anxiously waiting for the savage marauders to break cover; and as the snow laid thickly on the ground, it afforded an unfailing means by which to note their advent. Becoming dissatisfied with this state of rest, and knowing that the Pajaro Pass was badly blocked with snow, I determined to move down toward the pass of the Alamo Gordo, and occupy such a position as would afford us a sort of cut-off to any

movement through that cañon. Camp was acc
changed, and a fresh position, in the open plain,
No man in the command had more than two b
and many had only one; wood was scarce, requ
hands to collect enough for ordinary cooking p
the snow was six inches deep, and the weather
threatening. In no sense could our condition be
agreeable. At eight o'clock P. M. another terrib
storm burst upon us. The wind howled with fu
the flakes covered us with such density that it wa
sary to throw it from the upper blanket every ha
its weight being oppressive. In the meantime t
had been stationed at the outlet of the Alamo
Pass, with strict orders to inform me the mom
Indians should make their appearance. Snow co
to fall, but in moderate quantities, all of the ne
and I heard nothing from my spies. The storm
increased that night, which was also extremel
and next morning, at five o'clock, one of my
men arrived in camp with the information that
dians had passed with a large body of sheep at d
of the previous morning. He and his comrade l
mediately come on to inform me, but the severity
storm and density of the snow were so great
could not distinguish objects, even at a short di
he had lost sight of his companion; had wandere
all night, and was nearly dead with fatigue, su
and exposure.

The order to saddle up was immediately giv
obeyed, without waiting for breakfast, or even a
hot coffee, and the command moved in such a di
as would enable it to cut the Indian trail without
ground. Our rate of traveling was at the trot, an
little while the horses' hoofs "balled" badly, grea

peding our progress. In due course of time we reached the Pecos river, which was frozen over about two inches thick. The bank on our side was about four feet perpendicular descent, but on the other it rose gradually from the river. We plunged in, breaking through the ice, and as the water was only about two feet and a half deep, no damage was sustained further than cutting the forelegs of the advance animals. Half an hour after crossing the Pecos, we struck the broad, fresh trail of the Navajoes, which gave evidence of having been passed over some hours previous, as in many places it was covered with fresh snow two inches deep. The knowledge of this fact was disheartening, especially as night had commenced to close its sable curtains about our vision; but there was such a marked distinction between the virgin snow and that which had been trampled, that there was no difficulty in following the trail, although with greatly lessened speed. The storm had ceased two hours before, leaving us comparatively relieved. About eight o'clock P. M., we were hailed by an Apache, who said: *Nejeunee, pindah lickoyee; nuestche shee*—which means, "good friend, white eyes; come here." I halted the command and bade the speaker come forward. It proved to be Nah-tanh, accompanied by Nah-kah-yen and Natch-in-ilk-kisn. Upon hearing my voice, they came up and said that the Navajoes in their march, the *evening previous*, had crossed through the camp of some herders of beef cattle, about fifteen miles above Fort Sumner, where a slight brush occurred between the vaqueros and the Indians, which was terminated by the Navajoes leaving fifteen hundred head of sheep behind, and making the most of their way with the great body of their plunder.

News was immediately conveyed to the fort, when

Maj. Whalen ordered out Capt. Brist
United States Infantry, while Mr. Lab
Apache Indians and seven men of my co
been left in camp to care for the hors
property, immediately mounted and pu
joes. At three o'clock P. M., they came
rauding band, which numbered about o
at once engaged the enemy, who forme
a stand with about two-thirds their for
mainder were urged forward with the s
flict lasted about an hour, during whicl
vajoes were killed, and the remainder r
ions. Bent upon recovering the pre
party pushed on, but did not succeed i
sheep until three hours later, when the
fled and abandoned their hard-earned
numbered nearly fourteen thousand h
the story told me by the Apaches. I
whether his people had remained with
guard the sheep, and he replied that h
but supposed some of them had.

It seems that the Regular Infantr
Whalen had obtained this intelligenc
that the affair was ended, had retraced
fort. Feeling it my duty to protect
his diminished force, we hurried on u
o'clock P. M., when we saw a very dim
toward which we directed our course,
rived in his camp, having accomplished
through a snow-storm. It is needless
was delighted to find himself so perfec
all his ammunition had been expended,
the seven men of my company and twe
him, and was apprehensive that the

make another attempt to regain their plunder and revenge the death of their slaughtered comrades. Mr. Labadie also gave me the gratifying intelligence that a soldier of my company, Peter Loser, had contributed more than any other person toward the success of his expedition, having killed five Navajoes, and being always in the front during the fight.

That night was extremely cold; the thermometer fell to twenty-two degrees below zero. We had not a particle of wood, but in that locality, strange to say, there was no snow whatever upon the ground. The earth was frozen as hard as a rock, and the keen, cold blasts swept over an unbroken expanse of plain for a hundred miles. Our sufferings were dreadful, but there was no chance for relief. In their panic and eagerness to escape death, the Navajoes had thrown away their blankets, and were literally without any protection from the exceedingly severe weather, whereas our Apache allies had gathered up these much-needed trophies and were comparatively well to do. Next morning, at daylight, an alarm was given to the effect that the Navajoes had re-assembled, and were coming down upon the camp. My command was mounted in less than five minutes, and led out at the gallop toward the point from whence the signal came, which, by the way, had been given by an Apache; but after spending two hours in the most active search, we failed to perceive any sign whatever of their presence. Convinced that there was no ground for the alarm, I returned to Mr. Labadie, and offered to escort him sufficiently far on his way to insure the safety of his command and their prize, which offer was gratefully accepted. Having seen Mr. Labadie out of danger, we directed our course toward the route that it was probable the Navajoes had taken, as it would be their first

effort to reach water, but our sear
soul of them ever came under our
quent arrivals of Navajo prisoners
tained several who had been enga
narrated, and they told me that it
tion to attack Mr. Labadie the nigh
but that our opportune arrival, o
come aware, completely changed
cess, and that instead of coming
they hurried off with all possibl
time we were hunting for them th
least forty miles distant. Mr. Lab
Fort Sumner with fourteen thousan
sheep, which would have fallen t
that my sentinels at the Alamo G
way in a snow-storm for twenty-fo
dians had left the pass with thei
rade did not rejoin us until I ag
Sumner, whither he had gone, afte
command had left for parts unkno

Several of my men, being quite
back to the fort by this opportunit
continued the scout. Once more
the northeast, but with little hop
dians. After several days we ar
Springs, about one hundred and e
east from Fort Sumner, and enco
cold surpassing anything I had eve
although a native of Maine, and a
most borders in the heart of win
were nine men from the same Sta
had ever known anything to comp
of the cold we suffered. The de
chas Springs is about seven feet, an

rch was in vain; not a
observation. Subse-
s at Fort Sumner con-
aged in the affair just
had been their inten-
ht of the engagement,
of which they had be-
the prospects of suc-
g back next morning,
le speed, and at the
ney must have been at
badie arrived safely at
nd head of re-captured
to us, but for the fact
Gordo Pass lost their
our hours after the In-
ir plunder. His com-
gain returned to Fort
er discovering that the
own.

indisposed, were sent
ty, while the remainder
our direction laid to
pe of finding more In-
rrived at the Conchas
eighty miles east-north-
countered a severity of
ver before experienced,
visitor to its northern-
nter. In my command
ate, and none of them
pare with the intensity
eepest part of the Con-
nd the men cut through

six feet of solid ice in the vain effort to obtain wate
their horses. Six hundred yards to the east was a s
elevation crowned with stunted cedar trees, from fo
twelve feet high, and there I determined to pitch
camp. The snow was eighteen inches deep and fr
hard, so that it required the weight of the hors
break through. We had no grain, and the only sub
ence for the animals was the hardy grama grass w
laid covered with ice-bound snow to the depth
tioned. It became absolutely necessary to uncover
sole magazine of feed, and the horses were trotted
until a considerable surface was broken, enough to
ble them to gather some fodder. In the meantin
small quantity of dry wood was collected, and a go
fire got under way, which was enlivened from tim
time by the resinous branches of the green cedars
firs about us, which yielded a lively, hot, but evanes
blaze. Green branches and trunks of trees were
down and carefully baked under the hot ashes until
became combustible, and in their turn did like se
for others. On the night of January 5th, 1864,
spirit thermometer declared forty degrees below ze
Fahrenheit. No man could go three hundred y
from camp and return at an ordinary walk without
ing his moustache covered with icicles, and if he w
beard in addition, the two would be frozen toge
Large quantities of snow and ice were melted in
camp-kettles to provide water for the horses, but th
imals were always led up to the fires, for if the w
were carried to them it would freeze hard before
soldier could reach his horse.

These facts, of which many witnesses exist in Cal
nia, will serve to furnish some ideas of Apache capa
to endure intense cold, especially when we bear in r

that they were at that tim
on save a breech-cloth.
ing sheep, a warm suit i
stripping the skin from th
own bodies within its fle
of hide serve to connect
When the rascals have tim
the sheep are formed in
which never exceeds thirty
to accommodate the flock.
selected and their horns l
these couples are ranged
flock, forming a sort of an
inclosed animals from wa
ning by night. Along ea
tioned a string of Apaches
distances, and animate th
rate of speed. Immediat
select warriors and keen r
main body of Indians follo
and urge on the plunder.
will run a flock of twenty
seventy miles in one day
tance, until they deem th
pursuit. They have been
tance of fourteen or fifteen
above described. These d
the Apache's capacity for

The term for our scout
termined to seek the warm
out delay, especially as
weak and thin. Fort Su
eighty miles distant, and f
snow averaged from one f

ning about with nothing
on they succeed in steal-
mediately improvised by
imal and investing their
olds. A few thin strings
skins and form a robe.
make their arrangements,
allelogram, the width of
, with a length sufficient
strongest sheep are then
together in couples, and
either side of the main
fence which prevents the
ing, especially while run-
ide of the mass are sta-
oot, who preserve regular
eep to maintain a regular
n front, a small body of
s lead the way, while the
the rear to push forward
this manner the Apaches
sand sheep from fifty to
dually lessening the dis-
elves tolerably safe from
wn to accomplish the dis-
dred miles in the manner
re sufficient to determine
rance.

ing nearly expired, I de-
egion of the Pecos with-
orses had become very
r was one hundred and
o-thirds of the road the
one inch in depth. We

---

reached the fort after five days marching, bei
rate of thirty-six miles per day. On arriving
mometer was again consulted, and showed fiv
below zero, which, although a severe cold, was
less a very grateful change in temperature.
formed that the morning previous to our a
thermometer at the fort stood at ten degrees b
and it was then that the action took place betw
troops and a small band of Apaches, on one
one hundred and eighty Navajoes, as already r
The day before our arrival we came suddenl
very large band of antelopes, and the men w
permission to ride in among them for a hunt.
them fairly corraled in such a manner as to co
passage through our line close enough to p
pistol range. On they came, probably to the n
two thousand, and dashed by with wonderf
The cavalry closed upon them and opened a
which terminated in giving us ten fine anima
than ten minutes. The scene was very exciti
men were all splendid riders and excellent m
Had their horses been in good condition, we m
procured many more. Just at the time of th
shooting, an ambulance, containing Lieut. Ne
another officer, escorted by four cavalrymen
sight and halted on the road about four hund
from the theater of operations. They though
that we had engaged a body of Indians, but
sight of the scampering herd, they rode for
were given a fine buck, which was lashed o
ambulance.

It was curious to remark the immense nu
ravens which daily directed their course to
recent battle field, below the fort. Regularly,

time of "reveille," immense numbers of them
wend their way right over the camp toward the
and as regularly return at the time of "retreat," fl
their wings in a sluggish manner, as if gorged wit
Curiosity impelled me to visit the ground and se
birds at their feast. The field was literally blac
them, and every corpse was thickly covered with
tering, fighting flock of scavengers. This regula
of crows and ravens was regarded by the Apache
unmistakable satisfaction, which was indignant
sented by the Navajoes, and served to keep ali
feud which had arisen between them. So soon
feeling evinced itself it was pressed into service
Post Commander, who contrived to make the
mutual spies upon each other's actions. Any mi
of an Apache was sure to be detected and exposed
Navajo, and *vice versa;* but the trouble of keeping
in order was much simplified.

would
south,
apping
n food.
these
with
a flut-
flight
s with
ly re-
ve the
s this
by the
tribes
sdeed
by a
them

CHAPTER XXV.

Religious Ceremonies.—Lack of Veneration.—Evidences of Mineral Wealth.—
Apache "Rough."—Tats-ah-das-ay-go.—Remarkable Order.—Anoth
Scout.—Apache "Hide and Seek."—Prairie Dogs and their Guests,
Apache Customs concerning Murder.—Sons-in-jah.—His Career.—His I
citals.—Former Condition of the New Mexicans.—How the Difficult
Commenced.—Reflections.—Articles of Apache Food.—Native Potatoes.
Apache Estimate of Dead Women.—Navajo Dread of Corpses.

Of religious ceremonies the Apaches have very fe
and these are limited to the immediate concerns of lif
The occasional scalp dance and its accompanying purif
cation of weapons, the feasts made at marriages, an
when the girls attain the age of puberty, and the cer
monials observed at the sepulture of noted warrior
comprise the whole among a people not overburdene
with reverential ideas, or prone to self-humiliation
Their prayers for success, if any such are ever made, ar
addressed to the Evil Spirit, who is supposed to rule en
tirely over the apportionment of fortuitous or preju
dicial results to the people of this world. It is greatl
to be doubted whether the bump of reverence was eve
discoverable in an Apache skull. It would be, as it ha
always proved, a sheer waste of time and labor to mak
any effort at inculcating sentiments which have bee
abjured by them from the earliest periods, and to which
they have become wedded. The teachings of christian-
ity are so diametrically opposed to all their receive
opinions and crystallized ideas, that they regard them
with abhorrence. To tell an Apache warrior that when
he is smitten on one cheek it is his duty to receive

slap on the other, is to proclaim the teache
an unworthy person, in his opinion. To i
that it is criminal to deprive other people of
erty, is to inform him that it is his duty to
der that his enemy may prosper. An end
plain to him that he should forgive his enem
bor no feelings of vengeance for their assaul
once convict his instructor of such unmitigat
as to forever debar him from all future co
The most that can be effected is to enforce
sion to superior power, which being accom
should be our aim to exhibit that leniency
is a stranger, and make a start from that p
would be a practical demonstration enlistin
tion and homage, and specially contrasting,
teachings of one religion as compared with t
other, or, more properly speaking, no relig
To inculcate just ideas of such important fac
savage mind, it is necessary to practice as well
and the practice must chaperon the preachi
discussion on this subject is so entirely for
objects contemplated by the author, and so
outside his sphere of remark, that it will be d
other and more practical considerations.

The Apaches entertain the greatest possib
our discoveries of mineral wealth in their coun
have had experience enough to assure them th
session of lucre is the great incentive among
ulate what is termed "enterprise." They kno
that wherever mineral wealth exists to such a
to render it available, the white man faste
with ineradicable tenacity. The massacre of t
set does not deter another company from exp
in the same engaging field. These localities

rendered more valuable by the proximity of wood a water, two scarce articles in Arizona. The occupati of mines involves the possession of water facilities a sufficient fuel. To occupy a water privilege in Arizo and New Mexico is tantamount to driving the India from their most cherished possessions, and infuria them to the utmost extent. If one deprives them their ill-gained plunder he is regarded as an outrageo robber; but should he seize upon one of their few wa springs, he is rated a common and dangerous enem whose destruction it is the duty of all the tribe to co pass. It may be reasonably inferred from these rema that when an Apache voluntarily discovers a rich mi to a white man he is influenced either by kindness, or attempting to lay a trap for his destruction, baited cupidity.

Among those under our charge was a noted fight named Tats-ah-das-ay-go, or the "Quick Killer." Th man was feared even by the boldest of his tribe; in fa he had acquired among them the reputation of being "Rough," or "Bowery Boy," and, although noted f his personal courage and prowess, was severely left the enjoyment of his own society in time of peace. H had espoused half a dozen wives, who found it impo sible to live under his capricious rule, and he was, the time of our acquaintance, a sort of tabooed indiv dual, to whom all paid outward respect, but entertaine concealed dislike. Tats-ah-das-ay-go paid little heed these demonstrations. He lived alone, hunted his ow game, received his own rations, and was seldom se among his fellows. For some unaccountable reason th savage conceived a great personal regard for the write and was accustomed to freely recount his adventures i various parts of Mexico, Arizona and New Mexico. A

cording to his own narrations, which w
the testimony of his fellows, his who
tissue of sanguinary deeds. A rivulet
the course of his history. He was a
native genius, and perfect master of al
lures, wiles and deceits. From him I
Indian character, and he seemed desirou
ah-das-ay-go wore upon his body hair,
below the middle of his back in a bro
number of silver shields, perfectly ro
tongue or bar in the center of each,
passed the band of hair in such a man
the shields to the greatest advantage.
per one, was the size of a common sauc
thick, while the next below was a little s
succeeding one still less in size, until t
teenth was about twice as large as a si
these he was extremely vain, and never
except to comb and dress his long and
These ornaments I had always believed
the saddle mountings of Mexican victin
I jocularly remarked:

"Did you have a hard time to acquire

"You mistake, Tata," he replied;
spoils taken from Mexicans; but I found
beat it out myself."

"Where did you find it?" I asked.

"Away down in the mountains which be
far south from here;" adding, "I will te
it. We were in the Guadalupe Mount
going upon the Llano Estacado to hu
previous to doing this a number of us cli
to look out upon the plains and see that
of Comanches. In ascending the mount

a were confirmed by
hole life had been a
et of blood tracked
a man of decided
all sorts of Apache
I learned much of
rous to teach. Tats-
r, which hung down
broad, thick plait, a
round, and with a
ch, through which
anner as to display
The first, or up-
ucer, and nearly as
e smaller, and each
l the last and thir-
silver dollar. Of
er laid them aside
nd luxuriant hair.
d were taken from
tims, and one day
[illegible]
ire those spoils?"
; "these are not
and this silver and
[illegible]
[illegible]
a border the Pecos,
tell you all about
ntains, and were
hunt buffalo; but
climbed the sierra
at they were clear
ntain I took hold

of a small bush to assist my steps, when it g
and I saw a bright lump of something just u
roots. Picking it up, I discovered that it was ve
and like the *pesh-lickoyee*, or *plata-hay*, with wh
Mexicans mount their saddles. I collected a
and afterwards beat it out in the shape you se
was many years ago and I have never been ther

I had seen enough of the mineral richness of
and New Mexico to convince me that there
some truth in this narration, but determined
until a favorable opportunity should occur to pe
ploration. Three or four months afterward ord
received from Gen. Carleton, ordering me to "
country clear of Indians for the space of *three*
miles around the post." Such an order had neve
been issued to an officer in the service. It was
leled and altogether unique; but in obedience t
scout was ordered under my command, and I det
to make an exploration in the region mentioned
ah-das-ay-go, and to take him with me. In du
the party left Fort Sumner, thirty-five strong, a
eled in a zig-zag direction for several days u
Guadalupe Mountains were reached. On the suc
day Quick Killer informed me that we were
cañon where he had found the silver, and that h
direct us to it next morning, which he did ab
o'clock the following day.

Having arrived at the cañon, I left the comm
der the charge of the First Sergeant, and proceed
Quick Killer for about a mile and a quarter, w
dismounted and hitched his horse to a tree, req
me to do the same, which I did, keeping my
ready and placing my holster pistols in my bel
then ascended about three hundred feet until we

a bold and unmistakable miner
with underbrush and stunted tr
a moment, examined the place
rectly to a spot, which he unear
displayed several magnificent s
I was satisfied, and possessing
we retraced our steps to the
were ever made cognizant of th
water and grass abound in the
ern Texas, on the Pecos river;
try is held by the Apaches, th
remain entirely useless for all
is but one of many experience
mineral resources of Arizona, N
Texas. Sonora, Chihuahua and
also extensively endowed with
are unavailable under present
crossing an extensive prairie, do
few shrubs and diminutive bus
teered, while resting at noon,
dexterity an Apache could con
no special opportunity existed
The offer was readily accepted,
distance until we came to a sma
to hide a hare. Taking his sta
said: "Turn your back and wait
This proposition did not exactly
character, and I said: "No, I wil
tell me to stop." This was ag
drawing my pistol, keeping a
shoulder, I advanced; but had n
Quick Killer hailed me to stop a
to the bush, went around it thr
in every direction—there was no

ledge, thickly shrouded
s. Quick Killer stopped
well, and proceeded di-
ned for a few inches and
ecimens of virgin silver.
myself of a goodly lump,
mmand, none of whom
e occurrences. Wood,
cality, which is in west-
ut so long as the coun-
valuable region must
actical purposes. This
demonstrating the vast
w Mexico and Western
portions of Durango are
ineral wealth, but they
circumstances. While
ed here and there by a
s, Quick Killer volun-
o show me with what
al himself, even where
for such concealment.
d we proceeded a short
bush, hardly sufficient
l behind this bush, he
ntil I give the signal."
nit my ideas of Apache
walk forward until you
ed upon, and quietly
rtive glance over my
gone ten steps, when
find him. I returned
or four times, looked
ossible covert in sight;

the prairie was smooth and unbroken, and i
if the earth had opened and swallowed u
Being unable to discover him, I called an
come forth, when, to my extreme surpris
laughing and rejoiced, within two feet of th
then occupied. With incredible activity a
had completely buried himself under the t
grass, within six feet of the bush, and had c
self with such dexterity that one might h
upon him without discovering his person.
pains to conceal my astonishment and admir
delighted him exceedingly, and he inform
their children were practiced regularly in t
"hide and seek," until they became per
We have far-reaching rifles and destructive w
they must ever be ineffective against unse
and it is part of a soldier's duty, while engag
countries, to study all their various devices.

Another excellent illustration of their skill
ment was given me by Nah-kah-yen. We w
together, when a large herd of antelopes m
pearance. Nah-kah-yen immediately tore
strip from an old red handkerchief and tie
point of a yucca stalk, at the same time han
rifle and saying: *Ah-han-day anah-zon-tee* —
long way"—he instantly buried himself und
and grass with the ease and address of a
once moved away several hundred yards, an
creep up to the antelopes, who were evident
by the piece of red rag fluttering on the y
Not wishing to interrupt the sport of my s
rade, and anxious to witness the upshot of h
remained a "looker on and a spectator" of
In a little while a marked commotion was no

the herd, which galloped o yards or so, but soon reco again approached the attra agitations occurred severa finally dashed away over speed. Nah-kah-yen then come, which I did, and fou the herd. We had all the pack, but the distance to c soon made.

Travelers over our plai that the prairie dog, rattles gether in one habitation, a problem myself, I asked se to do it for me. The ratt wise reptile. He permits th warm nest, and then he q does not disturb the safet and fit up another cell, quit tention, who makes it a p pair, unless pressed by dire stealthy manner devours on now and then, leaving no propensity. The parents n suspicion of their dangerou his best behavior in their pr destroying them with ease. snake never devours prairi more legitimate prey above sort of reserved fund. The descend into the depths of t rate cell close by its entran repose and to deposit and h time they sit nodding on to

ff very rapidly for a hundred
overed their equanimity, and
ctive red rag. These strange
l times, until the antelopes
the plains with wonderful
arose and beckoned me to
nd that he had killed *four* of
meat our horses could well
amp was only five miles and

s have *frequently* observed
nake and ground owl live to-
nd being unable to solve the
veral shrewd Apache warriors
lesnake, said they, is a very
e prairie dog to make a nice,
uietly takes possession, but
y of the inmates, who retire
e ignorant of the snake's in-
oint never to injure the old
e necessity; but in the most
e of the young brood every
evidence of his carnivorous
never seem to entertain any
s guest, who always puts on
resence, although capable of
. On the other hand, the
e dog when he can seize his
ground, but keeps them as a
ground owls scarcely ever
he hole, but burrow a sepa-
nce, whither they retire for
atch their eggs. In the day
the hillocks made by the

---

prairie dogs, and at night they hunt t
consists of lizards and all sorts of bugs
which they sleep—in the early morning
again about eleven o'clock A. M. As I
ined into this subject, I can only re
version.

Among nearly all other of our Ameri
man murders another, the next warri
slain person is entitled to the right
death by killing his murderer, after h
and condemned by a council of the trib
tom does not obtain among the Apach
kills another, the next of kin to the de
may kill the murderer—if he can. He
challenge him to single combat, which
fore all assembled in the camp, and both
result of the conflict. There is no trial,
no regular examination into the crime o
the ordeal of battle settles the whole
the next of kin decline to prosecute the
other warrior of the family may should
bility and seek retribution.

Among those who had surrendered th
very old man, probably nearly a hundre
for other men of fifty-five and sixty told
a noted warrior when they were little
name was Sons-in-jah, or the "Great St
frame was of enormous proportions. E
at that extreme age, was six feet three
moccasins. His shoulders were extre
arms of uncommon length, and his shri
hibited a volume of bone almost equal t
horse. The old man's eye-sight had begu
hearing was keen as ever. His head was a

and he was the only
Several of his front tee
a blow, but his molars
horse. Heavy folds o
down his abdomen; bu
and arms seemed to b
came regularly to see n
and it delighted me to
I felt convinced that fo
hands had been steep
fresh and vivid, full of
experiences of the past.
was neglected by the tr
a boy the hills and the
with his people. They
by all surrounding pe
among themselves. Fa
tes, and innumerable d
the aid of the Spaniar
weapons against their a
had none but stone-head
for lances. The Mexica
other day I was in Sant
dressed in great finery,
I remember when they
cloths, and were but too
kind of vesture. By an
and left the Mexicans to
quite on good terms wi
American traders arrived
ways getting drunk, and
else. These men made
our women and children
This excited our vengean

gray-headed Apache I ever saw.
eth were gone, probably lost from
s were almost equal to those of a
f thick skin fell over each other
t the muscles and cords in his legs
be made of steel. This old man
ne every day that I was in camp,
treat him with kindness, although
r three-quarters of a century his
ed in blood. His memory was
recollections, and teeming with
. He outlived his usefulness, and
ribe. He said, that when he was
valleys of his country were filled
were very numerous and dreaded
oples. But dissention crept in
mily feuds led to family *vendet-*
uels; that the defeated besought
ds, who afterward turned their
llies. In those days, said he, we
led arrows, and sharpened stakes
ns were just like ourselves. The
a Fé and saw the Mexican women
with gowns of many colors; but
wore little more than breech-
happy to own the very coarsest
d by the Spaniards went away
themselves. At first we lived
ith each other; but then some
d, who were dreadful people, al-
killing each other or somebody
raids upon us, and carried off
whom they sold to the Mexicans.
ce against the invaders and those

who bought their plunder, and ever
has raged between them and the Apa
eyes," added Sons-in-jah, know how
you know how to circulate your info
from one to the other, although you
know the party: but we poor Apache
late what we know and have seen
only, and we never get together in
main long enough to disseminate an
information.

The foregoing incisive sentences
drift of the remarks made to me
many occasions. I am largely indebt
information on other points, which he
fect freedom, especially as he conside
tegé of mine, and received more kind
from his own people. But with all m
obtain from Sons-in-jah any recital
sepulture. On this point he was
He was by no means vain-glorious;
his own deeds, unless extracted from
able circumstances. After sunning
day, he would wink his bleared eyes
ner, and invite me to take a seat near
his recitals. Deeds of violence and
hair-breadth escapes, terrific journeys
were rehearsed with intense gratificat
but after relating each incident he wa
to give me a "reason" for his acts.
sought to excuse the bloody record of
the incentives. If any other argumen
satisfy me that the Apache is fully co
ference between right and wrong, th
excuses were sufficient to remove all

I utilized old Sons-in-jah in a variety of ways. He was entirely nude, with the exception of a much worn breech cloth, and he complained bitterly that his people treated him with neglect, and robbed him of his rations. I gave him a good pair of soldier's pants of the largest size, a flannel shirt and a stout pair of shoes, which delighted him greatly. He came regularly every day for food, which he received from me whenever I was in camp, and at other times from some member of the company.

"How is it," said I, "that the Apaches contrive to live in places where there is neither game nor plunder?" The old man laughed heartily at my ignorance and simplicity, and replied:

"There is food everywhere if one only knows how to find it. Let us go down to the field below, and I will show you."

The distance was not more than six hundred yards, and we proceeded together. There appeared to be no herbage whatever on the spot. The earth was completely bare, and my inexperienced eyes could detect nothing. Stooping down he dug with his knife, about six inches deep, and soon unearthed a small root about the size of a large gooseberry. "Taste that," said he; I did, and found it excellent, somewhat resembling in flavor a raw sweet potato, but more palatable. He then pointed out to me a small dry stalk, not larger than an ordinary match, and about half as long: "Wherever you find these," he added, "you will find potatoes." This was in October, and a few days afterward the field was covered with Indians digging these roots, of which they obtained large quantities. Pursuing the subject, Sons-in-jah said: "You see that big field of sun-flowers; well, they contain much food, for we take the seeds, reduce them to flour upon our *metates* and make it into cakes, which are very nice. Again: the mescal, which you white people would pass without notice, is convertible into excellent food by the simple process of roasting. Furthermore, we know exactly when, where and how to trap and catch small animals, like the prairie dogs, foxes, raccoons and others; besides which there are many plants containing nutriment of which you know nothing, or would not eat if you did. One day an Apache woman died in camp, and I asked Gian-nah-tah if there would be much lamentation. He simply smiled at the idea, and replied: "It was a woman; her death is of no account." The Apaches are extremely reserved about letting outsiders approach their dead, and invariably bury them under the cover of night, with the most cautious secrecy; but the Navajoes were quite unreserved, and it was only by threats or promises that we could induce the nearest of kin to take a dead body out for sepulture. Cases occurred when the corpses were left wholly uncared for several days successively, and the deaths not reported, from a desire to escape the duty of performing the dreaded burial service.

CHAPTER XXVI.

Apache Boldness and Address.—The Papagoes.—A Fine Herd Stolen b
Apache.—An Officer's Horse Stolen.—Soldier Robbed of his Horse
cessity for Prudence.—Apache Games.—Sons-in-jah's Version. — A
Ideas of Gambling.—Races at Fort Sumner. — The Winners. — Manu
the Great Navajo Warrior.

The boldness and address with which the Apac
carry out their designs, and the crafty cunning they
play when desiring to mislead their enemies, can be
illustrated by stating several notable occurrences.
horses of the two companies commanded by Capt
McCleave and Fritz, of the First California Cavalry,
become thin and weak from long and active service,
needed rest and refreshment. For this purpose Gen
Carleton ordered them to the Reventon, a large ran
near the town of Tubac; but finding better grass and
perior camping ground near the town of San Xavier
Bac, the companies took up temporary residence at t
place. San Xavier is principally inhabited by Papa
Indians, and contains about fifteen hundred souls. T
Papagoes are semi-civilized, and have always be
friendly; but a deadly feud exists between them and t
Apaches, who seize every opportunity to annoy, rob a
murder those people. The Papagoes had a large nu
ber of horses which were grazed, in the daytime, ne
the town, and caught up at night for fear of their bei
stolen by the ever vigilant foe. When McCleave a
Fritz arrived with two hundred troopers, and graz
their horses by night under a strong guard, the Pap

goes imagined that the force would deter the Apaches and keep them away. Under this impression they also permitted their animals to feed by night. On the other hand, the Apaches, as one of them afterward told me, foresaw precisely what happened. Those foolish Papagoes, said they, will think that because the Californian troops are so near that their property will be safe, and will relax their usual caution; now is our time to act. They did act, and to such purpose that they took nearly every horse once possessed by the Papagoes. Here was a specimen of nice judgment, founded upon a shrewd knowledge of human nature, and executed with boldness and address.

A wealthy resident of New Mexico, near Polvadera, owned a herd of superior horses of which he was extremely careful. The band numbered nearly one hundred, and were renowned for their excellence. These horses were strictly guarded every day, while grazing not far from the house, by twelve or fifteen well armed Mexicans, and at nightfall were inclosed in a large and strong corral, the walls of which were sixteen feet high and three feet thick, the only entrance being through a large and strong gate which was heavily barred and locked. Numerous attempts to steal this herd had been made by the Apaches, but invariably without success. The horses fed on a smooth, open plain, which could be easily scanned, and was so close to the corral that they could be placed in safety in a few minutes. At length one bold rascal determined either to get the herd or die attempting it. One very dark and stormy night he contrived to climb over the corral wall, and concealed himself in the hay and feed scattered about. Here he remained until the earliest dawn, when he selected the best horse in the lot, and mounting him, waited for the gates to be thrown open.

Soon afterward the herders, yet unarmed, co
their *reatas*, each one ready to lasso a horse f
service, as was their custom, after which
horses were to be saddled, then arms taken,
driven to pasture. As soon as the gate was
the frolicsome horses made a rush to get
always did, the Apache keeping in the rear u
outside, when, with a yell, and the alarmin
an instrument they use when stampeding
started the frightened herd which darted
speed, leaving the astonished and bewildere
in distress. The scoundrel, by leaning dow
horse so he could not be seen, had escaped
accomplished the robbery. Comment upo
and desperate act is quite unnecessary; it speal

Lieut.-Col. Ferguson, of the First Californ
bought a fine American horse, for which he
hundred dollars. He availed himself of the
fered by my company to proceed to Tucson.
noon we camped in a grove of large cotton-
without underbrush, and in a favorable pos
picket line was run from tree to tree, and at
horses were fastened to it, fed, groomed, and
two men, one each side, placed over them.
would not permit his horse to be tied up wi
the company, saying that he did not want
nor bitten by those malicious half-breeds—
say, with some reason—for there were a
vicious animals among them. By his orde
stake was driven in the ground, about twenty
one end of the picket line, and just opposite th
to a narrow, rocky cañon. The moon was ver
but would set behind the mountains about
A. M., and orders were given to keep a special

collected with
for that day's
the selected
and the herd
thrown open
out, as they
until all were
ing sound of
animals, he
d off at full
red Mexicans
wn from the
d notice and
on this bold
aks for itself.
rnia Cavalry,
e paid three
ne escort of-
. One after-
-wood trees,
sition. The
at sunset the
d a guard of
The Colonel
ith those of
him kicked
-and, I must
number of
ler, an iron
ty feet from
he entrance
ry brilliant,
one o'clock
l watch over

---

the Colonel's horse after that hour. About the tin
mentioned, the camp was alarmed by the report of
couple of carbines, and on inquiring the cause, foun
that the sentries had fired at an Apache who had gon
off with the Colonel's horse. The successful robber ha
approached quite close to the animal without being dis
covered, and the moment the moon hid her light behin
the hill, he cut the halter, sprang upon its back, stoope
off on one side, and galloped up the cañon. The sen
tries heard the noise, suspected the cause, and fired i
the direction of the retreating savage.

The mail service between Forts Sumner and Unio
one hundred and eighty miles apart, required that th
military courier should be mounted on the best hors
disposable. The Reservation, at the former place, wa
forty miles square, and within its limits the Indians ha
a right to roam. On one occasion, while the courie
was returning with the mails, he stopped near the en
trance to a large and very crooked cañon, dotted wit
huge fragments of rock. At this place the grass wa
very fresh and fine, which induced the soldier to hal
and permit his tired and hungry horse to graze for hal
an hour. He accordingly dismounted, and let the ani
mal range to the extent of his *reata*, which was a remark
ably fine one, and about sixty feet long. Although o
the Reservation, he drew his pistol and seated himsel
on a fragment of the rock. While occupied in noticin
the movements of his horse, he was addressed by a
Apache, who had come up within four feet of him with
out being perceived. The Indian, who was unarmed
held out his hand in the frankest manner, and said
Nejeunee, nejeunee; which means, "friendly, kind."
The soldier, believing him to be one of those under ou
charge, suffered him to approach and shake hands.

Soon the wily savage pretended to be
reata, which he declared was the fi
and commenced to examine it with
throughout its length until he reached
he also evidently admired. Patting t
marked, *mucho bueno;* yes, answered t
fine horse. In the meantime, the Ind
the soldier, had drawn a small knife f
moccasin and severed the *reata* close t
ing the cut ends concealed in his left h
the horse with his right. Suddenly h
the soldier and shouted, *Comanche on d*
"the Comanches are coming." Involu
turned to see, and at the instant the A
the saddle, and in two bounds was be
shelter of a huge rock, from whence h
cape with the horse, leaving the soldier
in one hand and his pistol in the othe
and relate many more incidents of the
but as they all illustrate the same sp
will be omitted. The moral to be d
traveler can never exercise too much
among the Apaches, and it will never
their boldness, skill and craftiness.

They are fond of bathing in the sum
expert swimmers; but nothing can indu
themselves in winter. They are the m
gamblers, risking anything they posse
of a card. Men, women and children
engage in this vice; but there are some
women are never allowed access. Am
played with poles and a hoop. The fo
ally about ten feet in length, smooth a
pering like a lance. It is marked with d

e delighted at the
inest he ever saw,
critical attention
d the horse, which
the animal, he re-
the soldier, he is a
dian, unnoticed by
from the leg of his
to the horse, keep-
hand while patting
he pointed behind
lahl; which means,
untarily the soldier
Apache sprang into
ehind the friendly
he effected his es-
r holding the *reata*
er. I might go on
e same character,
pecial traits, they
drawn is, that the
h prudence while
r do to underrate

mmer, and are all
luce them to wash
nost reckless of all
ess upon the turn
n indiscriminately
e games to which
nong these is one
former are gener-
and gradually ta-
divisions through-

out its whole length, and these divisions are
different colors. The hoop is of wood, about
in diameter, and divided like the poles, of
player has one. Only two persons can enga
game at one time. A level place is selected, f
the grass is removed a foot in width, and for t
or thirty feet in length, and the earth trod
firmly and smoothly. One of the players roll
forward, and after it reaches a certain dista
dart their poles after it, overtaking and th
down. The graduation of values is from the
the pole toward the butt, which ranks highest
object is to make the hoop fall on the pole as
butt as possible, at the same time noting the
the part which touches the hoop. The two
then added and placed to the credit of the play
game usually runs up to a hundred, but the
arbitrary among the players. While it is goi
woman is permitted to approach within a hundr
and each person present is compelled to leav
arms behind. I inquired the reason for these
tions, and was told that they were required by
but the shrewd old Sons-in-jah gave me anothe
believe, the true version. When people gam
he, they become half crazy, and are very apt to
This is the most exciting game we have, and th
play it will wager all they possess. The loser is a
angry, and fights have ensued which resulted in
of many warriors. To prevent this, it was long
termined that no warrior should be present wi
upon his person or within near reach, and this
always played at some distance from camp.
prominent warriors are named as judges, and fro
decision there is no appeal. They are not suffere

while acting in that capacity. Th
are forbidden to be present is
foment troubles between the play
sion by taking sides and provokin
asked Gian-nah-tah why the Apac
to risk all they had in gaming. "
difference does it make? They ne
Apaches; fortune will not always
but continually changes. What is
long to somebody else to-morrow
man's goods; and, in course of ti
my old articles. In this manner e
the property of all his fellows."
style of reasoning, by pointing ou
rality of gambling, would only hav
rision and contempt, and as I a
especially one of the self-sacrificing
explanation with every mark of fa
several games of their own, in
mingle; but when cards are use
share in the business.

Racing on foot is another diversi
to by these active, restless Indians
erally manage to carry off the pa
tance is not too great. The office
a number of prizes to be compete
ner to take the prize apportione
which it was offered. The longest
the next a quarter, the third thre
the fourth one hundred. It was
forty years of age and over fiftee
fifteen up to twenty-five. About
and Navajoes entered for the prize
day for a week. At the appoint

The reason why women
is because they always
layers, and create confu-
king dissention. I once
aches were such fools as
"Why," said he, "what
never play with any but
ys stick to one person,
t is mine to-day will be-
row, while I get another
f time, I once more own
r each successively owns
' To argue against this
out the vice and immo-
have subjected me to de-
am not a missionary—
ing class—I received his
favor. The women have
n which the men never
used, everybody takes a

rsion frequently resorted
ans, and the women gen-
palm, provided the dis-
icers at the post offered
ted for, the fastest run-
ned to the distance for
gest race was half a mile,
ree hundred yards, and
as open for men under
teen, and for girls from
out a hundred Apaches
izes, and practiced every
inted time everybody in

---

camp assembled to witness the conte
competitors was the Apache girl, Ish-l
limbed, handsome girl of seventeen,
refused marriage, and she was the fav
whites. Each runner was tightly gird
belt, and looked like a race horse. Te
half mile stake, which was a gaudy piec
dress or shirt, as the case might be. A
went off like rockets, Nah-kah-yen leadi
and Ish-kay-nay bringing up the rear,
clean and easy as a greyhound. With
yards of the goal, she closed the gap,
steam engine, and got in an easy winner,
of all competitors. For the quarter mil
entered, but was ruled out by the oth
their objections were allowed, it being c
victor in either race should not enter fo

The second contest was won by Nah-k
without a desperate struggle with Ma
prominent Navajo chief. The third an
were gained by Navajoes. Manuelito
looking Indian man I ever saw. He v
in height, and of the most symmetrical
ing ease, grace, and power and activity
degree. He was a great dandy, and wa
ately dressed in the finest Indian costume
were highly ornamented, and his bucksk
without a wrinkle. A splendid bunch o
plumes, surmounted by two eagle's fea
his head, while his shapely feet were inca
worked moccasins. Navajo blankets ha
merited reputation for beauty and excel
them being worth a hundred dollars a pi
Mexican market, and over his shoulders

perior character, worn with
which a Roman Senator mi
toga. So vain a man could
brave, and he was noted fo
also esteemed one of the w
and had headed many a bl
until compelled to yield to t
on the Reservation his cond
decorous. He never hono
ence except when he came c
ited any animosity.

Although the Navajoes
one people, speaking the sa
nearly the same ceremonies,
many respects, undoubtedly
ence of climate. The cou
and inhospitable in winter—
long continued *frosts*—wh
Apaches is far milder, and i
rid heat. This compels the
tial huts of an oval form, t
being excavated, and the up
stakes brought together and
Long, slender and supple p
about the stakes, and the
mud. These huts are some
them being twelve or fourt
women are extremely dexte
perior kind of blanket, the c
black and white; but some
red, pink, purple, white, bl
produce a very gaudy and st
are perfectly water-proof, and
impart as much warmth as

the grace and dignity with
ht be supposed to don his
not be well otherwise than
his gallantry. But he was
est counselors in his tribe,
ody and destructive inroad
s Californian troops. While
ct was proud, haughty and
d any of us with his pres-
business, but never exhib-

d Apaches are identically
he language and observing
yet they differ materially in
caused by a marked differ-
ry of the Navajoes is cold
subject to deep snows and
s that roamed over by the
many portions of even tor-
Navajoes to erect substan-
lower portion of the hut
er composed of substantial
irmly fastened at the top.
les are then hooped closely
hole thickly covered with
imes quite roomy, many of
en feet in diameter. The
ous in weaving a very su-
lors of which are generally
mes made of green, blue,
k, etc., so arranged as to
king effect. These blankets
very thick, but they scarcely
ne of first-class California

manufacture. They last for years, retai
and colors without loss of brilliancy.
of blankets arises from the exigencies o
was originally learned from the Mexica
people lived on amicable terms. The
wool is one of their prime necessities, s
cause of the terrific raids they make i
which is specially a sheep raising count
herds of cattle are met, the Navajoes "
with avidity, but seldom molest them w
ber, as they cannot be driven with the r
leave a broader and more marked trail
for food. These Indians live together
numbers during the winter months, a v
containing from two hundred to eight h
ants. Such communities must necess
by a more systematic organization than
the Apaches proper; hence they have re
sub-chiefs, whose orders are obeyed, and
with the government of all present; bu
hereditary, the chieftainship being dete
tion. The fortunate candidate holds o
during good behavior, and feels no little
sition. In all matters wherein the Nava
the Apaches, they will be found chargeab
differences of their several countries. T
religious views, traditions, language, and
ment, as well as their personal appearan
ingly similar as to be almost undistingu
Navajo woman is more industrious and
Apache, she is also much more loose a
very marked characteristic of the latter
strict chastity, while the Navajoes are
noted for their utter want of virtue.

Prior to the time of M
of a serious character h
tribes, but that shrewd
bestow one of his daugh
Navajo chiefs, and fina
strictest amity, which co
ing his long life devoted
the Navajoes, angered at
at Fort Sumner, made
were driven off with gr
engendered by such cont
outside the Reservation
branch of the Red river
miles east-north-east fro
visited by Comanche In
large band, numbering
the commander at Basco
out" the Apaches locate
plied: "Do not attempt
three companies of soldie
are cavalry, and so sure
der their charge they wil
but will arm and place th
you. Take my advice an
terward, while out with
band of Comanches, whe
tion to me, and told me
had said. Divining the
replied: "You tell me no
this before, and have ma
welcome commensurate
My commander has sent
men to find you and cond
manches and Americans

Iangas Colorado, several disputes
ad occurred between these two
l Indian statesman managed to
hters upon the most noted of the
ally succeeded in restoring the
continued without cessation dur-
d to his people's good, and until
t the surrender of the Apaches
a raid upon their horses, and
reat slaughter. But the enmity
nflicts never extended to parties
n. Fort Bascom, situated on a
r, one hundred and twenty-five
om Fort Sumner, was frequently
Indians, and on one occasion a
nearly two hundred, informed
om that they intended to "clean
d at Sumner. That officer re-
t so foolish a thing. There are
iers at that place, two of which
as you molest the Apaches un-
ll not only fight you themselves,
he Apaches in the field against
nd let them alone." Shortly af-
a small party, I met this same
en the chief repeated his inten-
what the commander of Bascom
Indian's drift, I immediately
othing new. We have all heard
ade preparations to give you a
with your fame as a warrior.
me out with these twenty-five
duct you to his camp. The Co-
are friends. He does not wish

to molest you, nor will he permit y
those for whose safety he is respons
must come off, the sooner the be
Comanche brother wishes to move t
I am ready to accompany him." "
was the reply, "but will come this
moons, and then we will catch the
not fight the Americans." He and h
their horses and rode off into the v
easterly course. We never heard o

CHAPTER XXVII.

Ignorance of Indian Character Discussed.—Political Indian Agencies.—How the Indian Affairs Should be Managed.—Necessity of Force.—Absurd System in Vogue.—Crushing Out Advised.—How the Apaches Should be Fought.—Proper Method of Campaigning.—Suggestions.—Culpable Neglect of Congress.—General Deductions.—Californian Troops.—Conclusion.

THE romantic wanderings of Catlin, Schoolcraft and some others among the Indian tribes of North America; the delightful tales of Cooper, as developed in his "Trapper," "Last of the Mohicans," etc.; the stirring adventures of Captain John Smith, Daniel Boone, Chamberlin, Carson, Hays and a host of noted pioneers, have invested our Indian races with rare and absorbing interest. But they have also tended to convey false and erroneous impressions of Indian character, and have contributed to misguide our legislation on this subject to such an extent as to become a most serious public burden.

Since the foundation of our Government, Indian wars have cost the American people nearly four hundred millions of dollars, and the stream of expenditure continues with unabated volume. When the whites were few and the savages many, the cost of keeping them in subjection was measurably less than it has been since the reversal of our respective numerical conditions. Whence arises this anomaly? Simply because of our strange ignorance of Indian character as it really exists, and not as we have been taught to understand it by writers of attractive fiction, or the chroniclers of heroic deeds and romantic adventures. This sweeping assertion may be met with one more plausible and popular, because more suggestive, and having the merit of being sanctioned by time. "Is it possible," exclaims the old school debater, "that we have been for more than two centuries and a half fighting, treating, and dealing with our Indian tribes without acquiring a positive knoweldge of their character!" Such an exclamation certainly seems to be staggering. It appears to possess the vital force of reason and unanswerable argument; nevertheless, it is exactly true that, as a people, we know little or nothing about this very important matter. Unfortunately, those who have been the best able, from long and careful personal experience, to give the requisite information, have also been, for the most part, deficient in educational attainments and the capacity to impart their knowledge; while others have given no evidence of entertaining a just value of its public importance. Satisfied with their own acquirements, they have not sought to publish them for the benefit of others.

The white races of the American people boast European origin, mainly that of English lineage; but how much did the British really know of Americans, even at the period of our Revolution? Is not the history of that struggle indisputable evidence of the most lamentable and inexplicable ignorance on the part of the mother country? But, worse still; after the Revolution, after we had been in strict and closest commercial and political relations with Great Britain for over sixty years, after a second and sanguinary contest with that country, we have only to read the works of some of their travelers to arrive at the superficial and wonderfully erroneous idea of American character possessed by intelligent Britons.

When the two leading commercial nations of the globe, each claiming the highest civilization, spe identically the same language, and governed by the general laws, contrive to pass two centuries and s of close intercourse with such unsatisfactory interk edgable results, is it strange that a like ignorance sh exist between the American people and the non races of this continent?

Causes similar to those which operated as a b English knowledge of the American character hav terposed against our acquisition of precise informa relative to the leading traits of Indian nature. Wit being captious, it is assumed that British tourists h for the most part, approached us with something o intolerant and pre-occupied spirit. They came pared to encounter ill-bred, semi-educated, uncouth braggart provincials, rendered more unendurabl their democratic form of government, and political tility to the time honored institutions of their own c try. Reference can as emphatically be made to course pursued by the British in India, the Spaniard Mexico and Peru, the French in Africa and Co China. The conquering race seldom care to inf themselves minutely about the condition and charac istics of the conquered, and the results have been newed sanguinary struggles and immensely increa expenditures. Our own dealings with the nomads North America have been but so many chapters of same record. What has our Government ever done a concerted, intelligent and liberal spirit, to acquir definite knowledge of Indian character, as it ex among the tribes which wander over more than one-l the public domain?

The Indian Bureau, with its army of political ca followers, bent upon improving their short and pr rious official positions to "turn an honest penny," can scarcely be quoted as evidence of our search for the needed information. Tales of violence and wrong, of outrage and devilish malignity, committed by Indians, are rife all along our frontiers; but who ever hears the other side? Who chronicles the inciting causes, the long, unbroken series of injuries perpetrated by the semi-civilized white savages who, like Cain, fled from the retributive justice of outraged humanity, and sought refuge among the copper-colored savages of the woods and the plains? Naturally ferocious, warlike, revengeful and treacherous as were the aborigines of America, we have educated them to a pitch of refinement in cruelty, deceit and villainy far beyond their normal standard. If the white man has come to be regarded as his natural enemy, it may be set down as the result of long and murderous schooling. The inherent disposition of the American nomad inclined him to hospitality; but that inclination has been completely blotted out, and its opposite engrafted on his nature. Legends and traditions of white men's ingratitude have been handed down through so many generations, and the experiences of the living have been in such direct accordance with them, that they have become prime articles of their creed. Keenly alive to a sense of the inferiority of their armament, incapable of subsisting large bodies of men for any considerable period, and perpetually engaged in the work of exterminating each other, the several tribes have been reduced to the necessity of employing deceit against force, cunning against courage, artifice against honesty.

One of the most serious obstacles in the way of a settled and satisfactory arrangement with our Indian tribes results from our own form of government, which

requires a change of the whole working depar
the Indian Bureau whenever a change of admi
takes place. Nor can this evil be remedied s
the Indian Bureau continues to be a political
The savages cannot comprehend why it is th
few years imposes upon their acceptance new
tried Agents to regulate matters between them
"Great Father" at Washington, nor why the ne
should institute a policy different from that of t
decessors. Time, patience, zeal, great experie
conscientious discharge of duty are indispensab
site for the proper and just management of ou
relations, and even then they will be found deli
difficult under peculiar circumstances which
stantly presenting themselves. The first grea
should be a total and sweeping reform in this
The Department of Indian Affairs, as it is now
ized, should be abolished as a costly and unn
adjunct to a Government already overburden
political patronage. We have a large number
torious and highly educated officers of the army
retired list. Many of them have acquired consi
insight into Indian character during the course
campaigns in our Territories and on our frontiers
are drawing pay from the Government without
ing effective service. Their own high sense of
makes many of them feel as if they had been lai
the shelf as being no longer useful, and they w
but too happy to prove that their capacity to serv
country in this line is quite as great as it ever
their former field of operations. By appointin
men, and merging the Indian Bureau into th
Department, a regular, systematic policy would
sued, upon which our savage tribes could place re

partment of
ministration
l so long as
al machine.
s that every
ew and un-
m and their
new Agents
of their pre-
rience and
sably requi-
our Indian
delicate and
h are con-
reat object
is respect.
now organ-
nnecessary
dened with
er of meri-
my on the
nsiderable
se of their
ers. They
ut render-
of honor
laid upon
would be
serve their
er was in
ting such
the War
d be pur-
reliance,

and which would ultimately gain their confidence a
respect.

Why persist in maintaining a Department not only u
necessary, but which has always imposed enormous
penditures upon the people, and has frequently plung
us into costly Indian wars? What can a political cam
follower, who has done party service in our cities, a
been appointed Indian Agent as reward for such se
ices, possibly know of Indian character? And bei
profoundly ignorant of all that pertains to the peo
whose affairs he is about to manage, how can he condu
them with any degree of justice toward these people?
has been the writer's lot to be present at many meetin
between Indian Agents and their constituencies; and
has always been shocked at the insolent, intolerant a
supercilious manner of the Agents. It is as necess
to use common intelligence and prudence in our int
course with savages as in the performance of any oth
act. If a man were required to move an object,
first business would be to ascertain the weight and ch
acter of that object, with a view to applying the pro
motive power in a rational manner; but in our dealin
with Indian tribes this common sense and practical sty
of operation is completely ignored. We have not ev
condescended to apply the rules of every day life to
subject of such extensive interest. Is the savage to
blamed because he becomes provoked at such intoleral
folly? Is it to be wondered at that he should lose
confidence in people who, while claiming to be his s
periors, display such despicable disregard of decen
and good faith? And when he does evince anger a
disgust, after his fashion — the only one he compr
hends — straightway the worthy Agent shouts "st
thief," to conceal his own avarice and rascality, wh

he precipitates another costly conflict.
nicious system be utterly swept away, an
ment of Indian affairs confided to intell
cated men appointed for life, or during
from the ranks of our meritorious retir
may hope in vain for any better conditio
tions with the tribes.

In the foregoing pages the attentive re
found some food for reflection. He will
that the Apaches are not fools and idiots.
learned that they reflect, and argue with
logical acumen. He will have understoo
much about them which can be studied
sults. He will have comprehended the in
making a durable treaty with a tribe, each
which is sovereign in his own right, and
authority of any one to treat for him. Th
one policy pursued toward these Indians wi
of satisfactory result. They must be subd
of arms, and after submission, they must
from their country. It will cost much to
objects, but the expense will be a mere "
bucket," compared with that which must
to maintain the miserable little guerrilla wa
fore pursued, and which has only imbue
contempt for our much vaunted power. It
a force of seven or eight thousand men t
subdue the Apache race in Arizona and
but with such a force, properly officered an
the work can be done in less than one year.

Let it be understood, however, that the tr
required for constant, active and arduous s
field, and not to build forts, which are aban
or so after construction; nor to till the eart

Until this per-
nd the manage-
ligent and edu-
good behavior,
red officers, we
on of our rela-

eader will have
have perceived
He will have
a great deal of
d that there is
with good re-
mpossibility of
h individual of
l disavows the
here can be but
ith any chance
dued by force
t be removed
o effect these
"drop in the
be disbursed
arfare hereto-
ed them with
It will require
to effectually
New Mexico;
d appointed,
.

roops will be
service in the
ndoned a year
th, nor culti-

vate fine gardens, nor spend their time in dress
and burnishing weapons which are never use
men selected for this service should be picked,
tirely reliable. The rations of coffee, sugar,
everything but hard bread, the best of jerked b
tobacco, should be stopped while on duty in t
and their pay should be increased in proporti
the troops employed in active service must be
and their accoutrements should be simplified
greatest possible extent. A trooper's horse sh
be cumbered with a useless valise, holsters, and
lous amount of harness for display. The soldie
be equipped with two Colt's belt pistols, a f
Spencer carbine, and a large knife. All post
be kept and guarded by the infantry, aided by
detachment of cavalry to act as herders, and at e
there should not be less than from fifty to sev
good horses, which may be rendered immediate
able by any scouting party whose animals are b
to tire. At each post the Commissary should be
to keep constantly on hand and baled in raw-hid
packages of bread and meat of not more th
pounds in each bale, and enough in quantity
ten days' rations for fifty men. There should
sufficient number of pack mules and *aparejos*
this amount of provision, and no mule should
with more than two packs. With these precau
pursuing party could replenish their stores and
fresh horses and mules without the unnecess
vexatious delays which have proved so fatal to
in our Indian campaigns in the Territories nam

Three thousand men, divided into companies
each, would place sixty such companies in the
one time, and this force could sweep Arizona f

to end in six months. Extreme c
prevent the Apaches from escapin
ico, and operations should commen
and eastern frontiers. The same
plied to New Mexico at the same
the northern and western frontiers
scout, should take only one pair of
one pair of drawers with them, in a
wear. All blankets and other ba
veyed by pack mules so lightly lad
able to keep up with the horses. I
should consist of thick buckskin pa
with flannel, and in summer of the
but without trimmings, except the
commissioned officers. Marching
avoided as much as possible, unles
trail. No fires should be allowed fo
and when the state of the weather
should be concealed as much as the
mit. The rations of coffee and suga
in winter. The course of operation
suggest itself to each officer in comm
and he should be allowed discretiona

It will be perceived that, although
require some space for their explana
sent a far more simple system than an
tice, although susceptible of very grea
improvements, which must be sugges
stances which may present themselves
It is, however, clear that a great cha
in our mode of dealing with the Apac
years of unceasing warfare, without
than the loss of many lives, much pro
diture of enormous sums; the devas

care should be taken to
ing into Northern Mex-
nence from the southern
e system should be ap-
e time, commencing at
rs. The men, while on
of socks, one shirt and
n addition to those they
baggage should be con-
laden that they may be
In winter the clothing
pants and jacket, lined
he usual cavalry dress,
the chevrons for non-
ng by day should be
less when following a
for cooking purposes;
er required them, they
he ground might per-
gar should be allowed
ons in the field would
nmand of a company,
onary power.
gh these suggestions
nation, yet they pre-
any ever put in prac-
reat modifications and
gested by the circum-
ves from time to time.
hange must be made
pache race. Twenty
out any other result
property, the expen-
vastation of a large

---

extent of country; the unavailability
richest mineral regions in the Union, an
ance of the perils to which immigran
while crossing it, should have sufficed t
we have been suffering from an inadeq
warfare. It is time that something mor
tried. Matters can scarcely be worse t
been and are.

Forty or fifty infantry at a post, whicl
missary and Quarter-Master's establishme
various belongings; its hospital with its c
cooks and attendants; its Adjutant's c
clerks; the Commander's orderly, the c
and other modes of occupying the troop
be deemed a very effective force in an A
Nevertheless, such is the style of warfare
carried on—occasionally varied by a smal
alry making a scout with great lumbering
marching by day, and following the high
one imagine that these remarks are in an
to reflect on the officers and men doing d
and New Mexico. All such idea is em
avowed. They do the very best that can
the circumstances. No man can be exp
advantageously with both hands tied behi
can't help themselves; but are placed in a
embarrassing position from which there
escape.

While Congress has been voting millic
improvements, would it not have been wi
ate a small amount for the purification of
rich and extensive Territories in the ver
country? If Alaska be worth seven mi
and New Mexico are worth one hundred

suggested by one high in au
tion of three millions to assis
would be an act of wisdom, as
crease the yield of the Comsto
to have suggested itself to the
that the region withheld fro
Apache race contains more mi
Comstock lodes. We are flou
tional debt, and financiers are
termine how it shall be exti
dream of the untold wealth
which form the stronghold of
behaved with the most Christ
toward that people. Every ti
on one cheek we have turned t
ditional slap, which they were
stow. Is it not almost time to
side and perform what we have
our Government aware that th
tories could present a bill for ov
for damages suffered at the han
ing the past twenty years?

It matters not by what proces
the Apache has become the m
thirsty, villainous and unmitig
it is quite sufficient that he is so
ble of improvement. Kindness
his contempt, and he regards the
tisement does not procure his ve
certainty than want of caution.
the highest achievement to beco
scarcely an object in whom to rep
ever regard they exhibited towar
duced by the conviction that I w

authority, that an appropria-
sist the Sutro Tunnel project
as it would enormously in-
tock lode; but it seems never
the minds of our legislators,
rom our occupation by the
mineral wealth than twenty
oundering under a great na-
re puzzling their wits to de-
tinguished; but they never
h buried in the mountains
of the Apaches. We have
istian spirit of forbearance
time they have smitten us
the other to receive an ad-
e by no means loth to be-
to put our "Quaker" one
ve so long threatened? Is
the people of those Terri-
over fifty millions of dollars
ands of those Indians dur-

ess or method of schooling
most treacherous, blood-
igated rascal upon earth;
so, and that he is incapa-
ss and generosity provoke
hem as weaknesses. Chas-
vengeance with any more
. The man who deems it
come a dexterous robber is
repose confidence. What-
ard myself was more in-
was serviceable to them,

while their respect was enforced through
my troopers. Nevertheless, when I was
from Fort Sumner, they all mounted th
rode with us for two hours, and appeare
our departure. This would seem to exp
of gratitude, and so I imagined it, until
telligence disclosed the fact that they w
elated.

From the time of their last conflict wit
in which ninety of the latter were slain c
fifteen miles of the Reservation, where th
were seen by the other Navajoes under c
two people had never lived comfortably t
camps were located four miles apart, but
disputes were constantly arising which oc
my time to arrange. At length the matt
bearable to the Apaches, who were outnu
one, and they applied to Gen. Carleton f
a separate Reservation. This was refuse
solved to leave by the first good opportu
bar to this was the presence of my com
they entertained a most salutary dread,
stantly receiving little presents and kind
all the men. The Apaches had freque
their target practice with carbine and pi
which arms they had acquired wonderful
they were also struck with the easy and
my troopers. Gian-nah-tah, being angr
Capt. Updegraff, who had denied them
no right to grant—"You think we care fo
men; not a bit of it, we are only restraine
ifornians." When they saw those Calif
they were actually delighted, and in
months afterward, the great body of the
parts unknown.

As an example of the
arrived in the use of th
dent will suffice. Whi
road to the San Bernar
to settle a little difficult
by a fine antelope buck
tant, and going at speed
single file behind me, a
telope." At the word
raised his carbine and fi
examination, it was fou
him.

The information which
relative to the Apache
added to my former conv
any enduring sense of g
ness precludes any hope
long and close experienc
the conviction in my min
ity to commit outrage ca
arms, in a vigorous and n
ecuted with an overwhel
sudden and decisive end
their country at the sam
in the field until the objec

In the foregoing work
have been recited as serv
Indian character; and if a
either pleasure or profit fr
periences should serve in
our Indian policy, the au
vain.

F

precision to which my men had
r fire-arms, the following inci-
passing the "Caves" on the
no river, whither we had been
with the Piutes, we were passed
about one hundred yards dis-
There were fourteen men in
I cried out, "Fire at that an-
ach man checked his horse,
d. The animal fell, and upon
d that every ball had struck

I received from Mr. Labadie
gira from Fort Sumner, only
tion that they are incapable of
titude. Their intense selfish-
from that quarter, while the
I had with them, established
that their intensified procliv-
nly be suppressed by force of
too merciful campaign, pros-
ing force, and brought to a
occupying many portions of
time, and keeping the forces
be accomplished.
ly such personal adventures
to exemplify some trait of
of my readers have received
n its perusal, or if these ex-
ny way to modify or better
or will not have written in

IS.